

WELCOME
THEN
BETRAYAL

(the earth beast of Revelation 13)

Jonathan Gray
Assisted by Josephine Gray

Expanded third edition

CONTENTS

PREFACE

INTRODUCTION

<i>WHAT IS THE SEA BEAST OF REVELATION 13?</i>	13
<i>WHAT IS THE EARTH BEAST OF REVELATION 13?</i>	29
1. WHO IS THE “MAN” IN CHAPTER 13?	32
2. WHO IS THE FALSE PROPHET?	50
3. WHAT IS THE “ABYSS”?	57
4. 12 BIBLE REQUIREMENTS FOR THE EARTH BEAST	73
5. IS THE SECOND BEAST SATAN?	112
6. “PROOFS” THAT FAILED	125
7. SUMMARY OF THE REVELATION 13 BEASTS	130
8. IS THIS PROPHECY ALREADY FULFILLING?	131
9. THE 2 CANDIDATES COMPARED	193
10. REQUEST TO PRODUCE	196
11. CHALLENGES SIDE-STEPPED	197
12. CONCLUSION	205
<i>APPENDICES:</i>	
A: ROME CONTROLS ALL ORGANIZATIONS	207
B: FIRE FROM HEAVEN IS A COUNTERFEIT PENTECOST REVIVAL	220
C: THE JESUITS AND PROTOCOLS OF ZION	223
D: THE FIRST BEAST IDENTIFIED	226
E: EXTRA INSIDE INFORMATION	244
F: “MAN OF SIN”: WHOSE SIDE ARE WE ON?	253
G: HOW TO SURVIVE	257

PREFACE

“This is going to be quick and dirty today. No cute cartoons. No philosophizing. We haven't time for any of that today,” warned noted political investigator Edgar J. Steele, this week.

“I believe we are on the verge of the outbreak of World War III. *Right now....* There is a convergence of factors just now that, taken together, suggest something momentous in the offing.”

Then he got down to the nuts and bolts.

“What to do?

“Get out of the cities.

“Stock up on food and water. It is too late to order from the dehydrated food suppliers. [They are already sold out, until the end of 2009.] Go to your supermarket and stock up on canned and dried foods. Put as much away as your funds and storage space will allow. A year's worth is not out of the question.

“Keep your vehicle gas tanks filled and fill up some spare 5-gallon containers with fuel, as well. Have your way out of the city planned in advance.

“Get ready for a possible viral pandemic, similar to the 1917 Spanish Flu - this means, be prepared to quarantine your family for weeks, if not months.”

Don't think such urgent advice is only for Americans **right now**. Very soon it will be for all people everywhere. What is coming will affect us all.

Get ready. Get ready.

Whole world affected

According to economic experts, the global economy is now so intertwined, with so many countries holding billions of US dollars, that if the US economy and trade collapse, so will those of Asia, Europe and the world.

Financial guru Christopher Laird, asks: “What would be the outcomes if the USD world financial / economic system fell apart?” Answer: “...world inflation will spiral out of control, lowering standards of living. Other major currencies such as the Euro and Yen will be heavily pressured as well.” (Christopher Laird, *The Market Oracle*)

“The Eurozone is tipping into **a deeper downturn than America itself** despite the tremors in the US mortgage industry, and may already be in full recession for the first time since the launch of the single currency.” (Ambrose Evans-Pritchard: July 15, 2008)

Jacques Cailloux, Europe economist at the Royal Bank of Scotland, said a “reverse decoupling is now under way as Europe goes down harder than the US.... We can't exclude a recession.”

Since the beginning of July, 2008, Germany has announced that it will no longer accept Euros from eight of its fellow EU members.

Have you heard the saying, “When America sneezes, the whole world catches a cold”? The world knows that when the U.S. goes down the whole world will go down. The other countries of the world are warning their people. The head of the Bank of England has told Britain that its economy is in for a “horrible surprise”.

Importance of recognising the second “beast”

For years I have been warning, “If you want to know what is coming, get to understand the prophecy of Revelation chapter 13 with its two prophesied ‘beasts’ ”.

Watch the Vatican. Watch America (what happens there). Then you can **know with certainty** what is predicted to come upon the whole world.

Our heavenly Father, in His wonderful foreknowledge and tender compassion, gave us certain information about the second “beast”, so that as we watch the scenario developing, we will know how it is going to unfold – and prepare ourselves in advance – physically and spiritually.

On the other hand, the enemy of the human race – Satan, the hijacker of Planet Earth - hates God’s children. He does not want them to survive this coming crisis. He wishes destruction upon them – both physical and eternal.

For this reason he has established **decoys** – theories aimed at diverting us from the truth.

One of these theories – a very popular and clever one – is that the “mark of the beast” is a physical tattoo.

Result: This widely promoted idea will throw countless numbers of people off-guard. Then, when the real “mark” is imposed, multitudes will unsuspectingly fall for it.

Another theory concerns the second beast of Revelation 13.

Many expect that Satan will finally appear to impersonate Jesus. **Satan is not slow to take advantage** of that expectation. How better than to make us think the Revelation 13 “second beast” is that future Satan appearance!

Result: He can thus divert our attention. While we focus glassy-eyed on this “future appearance”, we ignore the true fulfilment of the second “beast” prophecy even while it is happening before our eyes – then we are caught unprepared. The real events surrounding that second “beast” break as an overwhelming surprise.

Satan is smarter than we. Sadly, people who believe such unbiblical theories are being set up for anguish and disillusionment.

Be warned. What was prophesied in Revelation chapter 13 is **happening RIGHT NOW**. Plans currently being hatched in secret will soon explode publicly.

Beginning with Protestant America, **there is about to unfold such a catastrophe** as to trigger a global law imposing the mark of the beast.

Those who read my books know I am a skeptical, careful and thorough investigator.

And it has to be that way. My newsletter list includes Atheists, Muslims, Hindus, Jews, New Agers, Roman Catholics and Protestant Christians... precision engineers, geologists, rabbis, priests, astronomers, historians and intelligence agents... who are in a position to shoot down sloppy investigation. My research is open to the world... It is exposed to close scrutiny every day... and after 40 years stands intact... in no major point discredited. Those who follow my writings and lectures know just how right I usually am.

Why? Because I trust in the Creator of heaven and earth, the Lord God of my life. I work for Him. And He keeps His work safe.

Why am I telling you this? In human matters I am weak, faltering and imperfect. But spiritual truth is something else. And you'd better believe it.

This report is *so important* that I had to alert you to its certainty. *You owe it to yourself and your loved ones* not to take this report lightly. Your life – and the lives of members of your family - might depend on your acceptance or rejection of it.

The heartache

Now may I tell you **why** this report is now being released.

Every Friday evening for months, I had been directing a precious couple through the treasures of God's Word. The husband said he longed to study the Bible every day instead of having to work. Such was his hunger for the truth.

Then one day Vincent (not his real name) said, "I think I'll go on the Internet in between our visits to you and find a website that teaches in agreement with what you are revealing to us."

That sounded fine to me. We loved Vincent's enthusiasm.

We were also sharing the gospel truths with many others. Among these, Rod (not his real name) and his family also became very dear to us. Through prayer, tears and genuine caring, we taught them to love God's

truth. With the Lord's blessing, we laid a biblical foundation that was sound, solid and secure.

Some time passed before we discovered that both Vincent and Rod, in their hunger for knowledge, were getting themselves caught up in a certain infatuation.

Infatuation?

Suppose your beloved teenage son falls "in love" with a particular girl, but you know that charming girl has a questionable background. Really, it doesn't matter what you say, or how good your evidence is, your pleadings will fall on deaf ears. Your infatuated youth will come up with "good" reasons why you, as a parent, don't have it right. You know what I mean?

You can always tell one who is infatuated with something. But you can't tell him much!

But it's not just youth that stumble into this trap. We adults can also fall under the spell – become infatuated, if you like – with ideas that we think are the best thing ever invented. Especially if we are babes in the truth, inexperienced in Bible study, we may even think we've found the final word. Listen to advice about it? No way!

Well, we were up against an infatuation. The signs were all there. The reaction was the same. My heart was breaking as I watched it happen.

Here was a situation where, from the Internet, a smiling, nodding man had told his tale well. (Have you heard of NLP – neuro-linguistic programming? Did you know that this technique creates a bewitching, hypnotic effect on the audience? Were you aware that this audience-programming technique was introduced into churches by a spiritualist New Age mentor?) And the most sincere people in an audience don't suspect **why** they are falling under the influence of the speaker's ideas – but they do, quite innocently.

And they'll defend those ideas hotly. The post-hypnotic suggestion remains with them. And they are never aware of it!

Of course, this particular speaker mouthed many good ideas. And he used the Bible to do it. You'd expect him to. Nevertheless, there were also subtle errors in his teaching. But our unsuspecting friends fell for it, hook,

line and sinker. Then, in their honest enthusiasm, began promoting it widely.

As we looked on, both my wife Josephine and I suffered the deep pain, sorrow, and sickness of heart that the apostle Paul must have experienced. This same agony of heart led Paul to write to those precious people in Galatia. He had instructed them in nothing but the truth. And he had done this faithfully and tirelessly. Yet they were so easily diverted by pleasant-sounding theories:

“I marvel that **ye are soon removed** from him that called you into the grace of Christ, unto another gospel.” (Gal.1:6-9) Paul’s heartbreak and tears run through his letter.

Surprising, sparkling gems

You will notice the format in this presentation to be a little different from your average book. It started simply as notes on the second “beast” of Revelation chapter 13.

To be honest with you, I had no intention of writing a book on this, at all. It was simply notes given out at a lecture. Their purpose: to address specific objections.

But the reaction was overwhelming. “Give me ten more copies,” pled one man. “For the first time in my life,” exclaimed another, “this makes me VERY excited about the Bible!” “You just **have to** release it as a book,” one woman urged. “There are so many people all over the world who need this.”

Okay, they twisted my arm – but, between you and me, I was also quite excited - because beautiful, sparkling “new” gems of truth were now leaping out from the prophetic pages **as we had never seen them before!** Of course, we had prayed hard for the Lord to take charge of this investigation – and did He let us down? You be the judge.

So here it comes now – a detailed expose of the second “beast” of Revelation chapter 13.

Who hid these precious gems in His Word? And who directs us to them? All credit goes to our wonderful heavenly Father.

INTRODUCTION

If you were to ask, what are the most fascinating of all prophecies, I would have to answer: those found in the biblical books of Daniel and Revelation.

Revelation chapter 13 speaks of **two “beasts” that will emerge onto the world stage in our day – and interact together – a sea beast and an earth beast.** (Don’t worry, as we go into our investigation we shall find that the Bible itself explains these symbols.)

The events portrayed in this prophecy are not only important, they will soon break upon the world as an overwhelming surprise.

As it turned out, some dear friends of ours recently fell heavily for the idea that the **second of these “beasts”** is an individual person – the devil himself - appearing visibly to the world.

A shocker, if ever there was! And if you know me, wild horses could not stop me from pursuing a fully fledged investigation into such a claim.

In any case, you should very much enjoy this journey of discovery.

In such a project, two criteria are vital:

1. **One must confine oneself to FACTS – but only CONNECTED facts.** Assumptions, speculations and conjecture are OUT!
2. **The Bible must be the final authority.**

MY SPECIAL REQUEST TO YOU

Please do not jump into the middle, or the end, then say, “I know what’s in here. My conclusion is right, after all.” You will end up mistaken and not know it. You will miss what you first need to know, in order to understand correctly what comes later.

Before God, I ask you to go through this paper carefully, prayerfully and systematically from page one to the finish – in that order. Thankyou for your cooperation. And may our heavenly Father bless you personally and mightily.

“Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things that are written therein: for the time is at hand.”
(Rev.1:3)

OUR AIM

Our PRIMARY AIM will be to identify the SECOND BEAST of Revelation 13:11-17.

DEFINING TERMS

In this report, **the first beast** is variously described as:

- the first beast
- the sea beast
- the beast from the sea
- the 10-horned beast
- Rome (or Rome’s New World Order)

The second beast is described as:

- the second beast
- the earth beast
- the 2-horned beast

A FINAL TIP BEFORE WE START

Before studying what follows, may I humbly suggest that you first offer a prayer that the Holy Spirit will accompany you and enlighten your mind as you proceed through the study. It will also be helpful to have a King James Bible with you.

REVELATION 13 (KING JAMES BIBLE)

For quick and easy reference, here is the whole chapter of Revelation 13:

- 1 *And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, [Dan. 7.3] having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy. [Rev. 17.3]*
- 2 *And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: [Dan. 7.4-6] and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.*
- 3 *And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast.*
- 4 *And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him?*
- 5 *¶ And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months.*
- 6 *And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, [Dan. 7.8, 25 ; 11.36] to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.*
- 7 *And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: [Dan. 7.21] and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.*
- 8 *And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life [Psa. 69.28] of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.*
- 9 *If any man have an ear, let him hear.*
- 10 *He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.*
- 11 *¶ And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon.*
- 12 *And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.*
- 13 *And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men,*
- 14 *and deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live.*
- 15 *And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed.*
- 16 *And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and*

bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads:

17 and that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.

How we shall examine this

We shall approach this investigation as follows:

WHAT IS THE SEA BEAST OF REVELATION 13?	13
WHAT IS THE EARTH BEAST OF REV. 13?	29
1. WHO IS THE “MAN” IN CHAPTER 13?	32
2. WHO IS THE FALSE PROPHET?	50
3. WHAT IS THE “ABYSS”?	57
4. 12 BIBLE REQUIREMENTS FOR THE EARTH BEAST	73
5. IS THE SECOND BEAST SATAN?	112
6. “PROOFS” THAT FAILED	125
7. SUMMARY OF THE REVELATION BEASTS	130
8. IS THIS PROPHECY ALREADY FULFILLING?	131
9. THE 2 CANDIDATES COMPARED	193
10. REQUEST TO PRODUCE	196
11. CHALLENGES SIDE-STEPPED	197
12. CONCLUSION	205
APPENDICES:	
A: ROME CONTROLS ALL ORGANIZATIONS	207
B: FIRE FROM HEAVEN IS A COUNTERFEIT PENTECOST REVIVAL	220
C: THE JESUITS AND PROTOCOLS OF ZION	223
D: THE FIRST BEAST IDENTIFIED	226
E: EXTRA INSIDE INFORMATION	244
F: “MAN OF SIN”: WHOSE SIDE ARE WE ON?	253
G: HOW TO SURVIVE	257

PRE-REQUISITE

Frankly, before we can ever discover what this “earth beast” is, we need to first know the identity of the “sea beast”. For those who are not familiar with the prophecies of Daniel and Revelation (and in particular the sea beast of Revelation chapter 13), there follows a quick summary. This will provide the setting for everything that follows. So, are you coming along with me? Here goes...

FIRST: WHAT IS THE SEA BEAST OF REVELATION 13?

What is the beast? A man? A computer?

And when is the beast? Is it past or future? Or could it be present?

The Bible provides the answer. An angelic interpreter told Daniel, "The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon the earth." (Daniel 7:23) There you have it from the Word of God. A beast is a kingdom.

Let's put emotions, personal opinion and speculation aside, and adjust our brains to facts - solid, unquestionable, irrefutable evidence.

The beast rises from the sea (Rev.13:1), looks like a lion, bear, and leopard (13:2), has ten horns (13:1), a mouth speaking great things (13:5), makes war on the saints (13:7), and achieves global influence (13:7).

Daniel chapter 7 talks about the same things, describing four beasts rising from the sea (7:1-3), a lion, bear, leopard, and dragon-like animal with ten horns (7:4-7), a little horn with eyes like a man (7:8), a mouth speaking great things (7:8), which makes war on the saints (7:21).

Most scholars agree - both Protestant and Catholic - that Daniel's little horn (which we shall explain shortly) is the same as the beast in Revelation 13:1. Each has a big mouth and makes war on God's people. These are all facts.

The two books of Daniel and Revelation are twins. The prophecies of Daniel lay the foundation for understanding the book of Revelation.

The book of Daniel, contains four parallel prophecies:

1. Daniel chapter 2
2. Daniel chapter 7
3. Daniel 8-9
4. Daniel 11-12

Each successive prophecy elaborates on the previous one, adding more detail. An understanding of this **pattern** is essential if we wish to understand Revelation correctly.

We shall confine ourselves to just two of these - the prophecies of Daniel chapters 2 and 7. Then we shall take a look at the beast of Revelation 13.

Daniel chapter 2 – the prophecy of the statue

God allowed Daniel to pull back the curtain of time and look far ahead into the future history of the world.

He was shown a great statue with a:

- head of gold
- breast and arms of silver
- belly and thighs of brass and
- legs of iron
- feet and toes a mixture of iron and clay.
- Then a rock ‘cut out without human hands’ hit the statue's feet and ground it to powder. Then this rock grew larger and larger until it covered the whole earth. And it stood forever.

Daniel, informed by God, told the king of ancient Babylon: “You are that head of gold.” (Daniel 2:28)

BABYLON

Actually, Daniel was saying, “The **head of gold represents Babylon**, your kingdom, King Nebuchadnezzar.” For he continued: “After you, another kingdom will rise, inferior to yours.” (v.39)

MEDO-PERSIA

This **second kingdom was Medo-Persia**. It conquered Babylon in 538 BC. This power, represented by the arms and **chest of silver** was indeed inferior to the golden empire of Babylon, just as silver is inferior to gold.

GRECIA

“Next, **a third kingdom, one of bronze**, will rule over the whole earth.” (v.39) Two hundred years later, Alexander the Great, with his infantry, described by historians as **Greek** pirates “of **bronze**” coming from the sea, crushed the Medo-Persian Empire in 331 BC.

ROME

But this Grecian Empire, symbolized by the belly and thighs of brass would also pass from the scene of history, for God predicted **a fourth kingdom**, “strong as **iron**.” (v.40) And just as predicted, the **Roman** armies defeated the armies of the Grecian Empire in 168 BC.

ROMAN EMPIRE DIVIDED

“And whereas thou sawest the **feet and toes, part of potters' clay, and part of iron**, the kingdom **shall be divided**.” (v.41)

This giant empire ruled for 600 years before it disintegrated. During the 4th Century A.D., barbaric tribes from the north swept down over the Roman Empire. And by 476 AD, Rome had been **divided into ten segments**, just as the Bible predicted.

The kingdoms that emerged with the break-up of the Roman Empire are modern nations of Europe today:

- | | |
|--|--------------|
| 1. ALAMANNI | - GERMANS |
| 2. FRANKS | - FRENCH |
| 3. SAXONS | - ENGLISH |
| 4. VISIGOTHS | - SPANISH |
| 5. BERGUNDIANS | - SWISS |
| 6. LOMBARDS | - ITALIANS |
| 7. SEUVI | - PORTUGUESE |
| 8, 9, and 10: (HERULI, VANDALS and
OSTROGOTHS, now extinct) | |

KINGDOM OF GOD

Then the prophecy comes to an astounding climax: “**And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom** which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but

it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever.” (v.44)

Daniel chapter 7 – the prophecy of the beasts

In this prophecy, instead of four metals, there are **four wild beasts** rising out of the troubled sea.

- The **first was like a lion** and had eagle's wings.
- The **second was like a lopsided bear**, and it had three ribs in its mouth between its teeth
- The **third was like a leopard**, with four wings and also four heads “and dominion was given to it.”
- The **fourth beast, dreadful and terrible**, and strong exceedingly; had great iron teeth; “and it had ten horns.”

Daniel seemed to be especially intrigued by the **ten horns** of this savage looking animal and while he was thinking about the ten horns, he was amazed to notice another little horn pushing its way up among the ten.

“I considered the horns, and behold, **there came up among them another little horn**, before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots: and, behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things.” (Daniel 7:8)

The explanation is given: “The four great beasts are **four kingdoms that will arise.**” (verses 16,17)

We use the same symbolism today. When we see a bear and a kangaroo in an editorial cartoon, we immediately recognize that they represent Russia and Australia.

God used the same method of depicting certain nations long before man did.

But, you say, "what significance did **the churning, restless ocean** - and the four winds have in Daniel's dream?" Prophetic symbols are used consistently throughout the Scriptures. In Revelation we read: “The waters which thou sawest...are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.” (Revelation 17:15)

In other words, these four kingdoms, symbolized by four beasts, were to rise to power out of the populated areas of the world. **The winds** upon the sea fitly represents the strife and commotion coming from all directions that usually accompanies the rise and fall of earthly kingdoms.

Do you recognise **the parallel of the four metals in the statue with the four beasts** of the chapter 7 prophecy?

FIRST BEAST - BABYLON

Could anything better symbolize Babylon, the first great empire represented by the head of gold in the towering statue, than a lion - king of beasts?

The symbolism of the lion with eagle's wings was so appropriate, for that was one of the symbols used by the ancient Babylonian Empire. It is interesting to note that visitors to the excavated ruins of Babylon today can see lion-shaped base-reliefs on baked-brick walls and monuments, often pictured with eagle's wings!

The rapidity with which Babylon gained power and spread its empire is appropriately symbolized by the eagle's wings.

In the book of Jeremiah, God predicted that the Babylonian armies would invade ancient Israel and destroy her cities. Notice that God uses the same symbol of a lion to represent Babylon: "A lion has come out of his lair; a destroyer of nations has set out. He has left his place to lay waste your land." (Jer. 4:7)

However, God said the wings of the lion would be plucked and a man's heart would be given it. In other words, God was saying that Babylon would become so weak that it would no longer have the courage and boldness of one possessing a "lion's heart". And that's exactly what happened!

On the night when the Medo-Persians attacked Babylon, the king of Babylon's "face turned pale and he was so frightened that his knees knocked together and his legs gave way." (Daniel 5:5,6) Truly, the "heart of a lion" was replaced by that of a man. The prophet Jeremiah wrote concerning the soldiers of Babylon: "Babylon's warriors have stopped fighting; they remain in their strongholds. Their strength is exhausted; they have become like women." (Jer.51:30)

That night, October 13, 538 BC, the Babylonian kingdom, represented by the head of gold in the metal image, and by the lion with eagle's wings in Daniel's prophecy, came to an inglorious end.

MEDO-PERSIA

The kingdom or empire represented by the second beast (the bear) can be none other than the conquering nation of Media-Persia, the same kingdom represented by the arms and chest of silver in the giant statue.

“And it raised up itself on one side, and it had three ribs in the mouth of it between the teeth of it.” (Dan.7:5) This second empire was a dual dynasty or a coalition government: the Medes and the Persians were united into one empire. However, before long, the Persians were the dominant power in the dynasty. In other words, one side of this coalition was more powerful than the other. God had seen this shift in power and predicted it years before it took place.

It is generally understood that the three ribs in its mouth represent Lydia, Babylon and Egypt, the three principle territories gobbled up by the Medo-Persian armies.

GRECIA

There followed “another, like a leopard, which had upon the back of it four wings of a fowl; the beast had also four heads; and dominion was given to it.” (Dan. 7:6)

Just as a slow-moving bear proves no match for the agile leopard, so the Persian armies were unable to defend themselves against the swift advances of Alexander the Great.

The four wings appropriately picture the great rapidity of Alexander's conquests. He defeated Darius III of Persia in the battle of Arbela in 331 BC. In less than ten years Alexander had become the ruler of the most extensive empire the world had ever known.

But what about those four heads of the leopard? “Four kingdoms shall stand up out of the nation.” (Dan.8:22)

Did the Grecian Empire become divided into four lesser divisions? Indeed it did. After Alexander's death and a bloody power struggle, finally four of Alexander's generals gained control of the empire, which

split into four kingdoms – those of Cassander, Lysimachus, Ptolemy and Seleucus and their successors.

ROMAN EMPIRE

The fourth kingdom shall be “exceedingly strong,” with enormous iron teeth to destroy its prey. Here is pictured a cruel, vicious power. A more fitting description of the rise of the Roman Empire could not be found. It was more ruthless and brutal than all the previous empires, sometimes annihilating whole cities. When it didn't destroy or subjugate a people, it used them as slaves or sold them into slavery.

It is interesting to notice that in Daniel's description of this monstrous beast he said it had “iron teeth”. In the metal image, the same fourth kingdom was represented by iron legs.

ROME DIVIDED

“The ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise.”
(Dan.7:24)

No doubt Daniel's eye flashed back to the great metal image with the ten toes, representing ten divisions of the break-up of the Roman Empire, accomplished in 476 AD by the barbaric tribes of Northern Europe. These ten horns of the monstrous beast and the ten toes of the metal image represent ten smaller kingdoms that would result in the break-up of the Roman Empire. Seven of these kingdoms or nations are still in Europe today.

A LITTLE KINGDOM ARISES

But the thing that interested Daniel most was the “little horn” that pushed itself up among the ten horns, uprooting three horns, or powers, in its struggle for ascendancy.

“Behold, there came up among them another little horn, before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots.” (Dan.7:8)

Daniel noticed something else about this “little horn”: “And, behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things.” (v.8)

This part of the description of the little horn troubled Daniel. In fact, he wrote: “I Daniel was grieved in my spirit ... and the visions of my head troubled me.” (v.15)

But, you say, why would this part of the prophecy about the little horn cause him such concern? Daniel explains: “I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them;... And he shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time.” (vv21,25)

Daniel recognized that this prophecy was no longer just a prediction of secular history in advance. It had to do with God's people, for this "little horn" power would make war against the saints of God, and would actually prevail against them for a period of time. It would be a hostile, persecuting power. A power, or agency used by Satan to make war against God, His people and His truth.

ID POINTS

1. It will arise after the breakup of the Roman Empire – AFTER the other ten kingdoms.
2. It will arise among them (i.e. it is a European power).
3. It will uproot (eliminate) three of them.
4. It will be different from other kingdoms.
5. It will speak great words against (in place of) God.
6. It will wage persecution and war against the people of God.
7. It will “change” the times and laws of God.
8. It will prevail over the nations for 1260 years.
9. It will be revived and continue its work until the return of Jesus Christ.
10. It will be destroyed at the second coming.

Remember, when the Roman Empire collapsed, **ten divisions** resulted. Barbarian tribes hammered at the Roman Empire for many years until it fell apart and the ten divisions were ruled by ten kings! We have already noted that these were: the Alemanni (Germany), the Franks (France), Burgundians (Switzerland), the Suevi (Portugal), the Anglo-Saxons (Britain), the Visigoths (Spain), the Lombards (Italy), the Vandals, Ostrogoths, and Heruli.

When the “little horn” power emerged, **three nations resisted it**. These three, the Vandals, Ostrogoths and Heruli, were destroyed by the Pope of Rome. Finally, the armies of Emperor Justinian, in cooperation with the Pope, thrust the Ostrogoths out of the city of Rome. They have become extinct. In 538 AD the Pope took possession of the city after the Emperor decreed that he should be the head of all the Christian churches. Thus began the **1260 year political reign** of the papacy, until 1798 when Napoleon’s general Berthier abolished the political power of the Vatican and the papacy was declared to be “extinct”.

THE JUDGMENT

Prophecy reveals that the power of the fourth beast and the horns will exist until the end of time.

Then Daniel saw a most remarkable sight: “The judgment was set, and the books were opened.” (v.10) Daniel was shown the judgment scene in which the Father, or Ancient of Days, sits in judgment of the world and the "little horn" power that made war against the saints. Daniel foretells the outcome. “But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end.” (v.26)

In other words, God is saying, "Yes, I am the Judge... The saints of the most High shall take the kingdom, and possess the kingdom for ever, even for ever and ever." (v.18)

Revelation ch. 13 – the first beast (the sea beast)

RECEIVED ITS POWER FROM THE DRAGON’S ROMAN EMPIRE

"...and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority." (Rev.13:2)

It is clear that the beast gets its "seat" and "authority" from the dragon. But who's the dragon?

Here it is. "And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent which is the Devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years." Revelation 20:2. **The dragon is Satan. But there's more.**

"And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne."
(Rev.12:3-5)

Revelation 19:15,16 shows us that the "Man Child" is Christ. So the "dragon" represents not only Satan, but also **a kingdom through whom Satan worked to try to kill baby Jesus** as soon as He was born. Now, what kingdom was it whose king decreed the destruction of the babies in Bethlehem? Of course! It was King Herod. He was employed by, and a representative of Rome. So here's another clue. The beast gets its power, seat, and authority from Rome!

Primarily, the dragon is Satan. Historically, the Roman Empire is the dragon of Revelation chapter 12.

That same dragon had "**ten horns**". (Rev.12:3) This links this dragon also to the Roman Empire, which broke up into ten divisions already mentioned. It's coming clear. **Rome was the empire used by Satan** as his agency **to try to destroy the Saviour of the world!** Now let's take a closer look.

To whom did the Roman Empire hand over its seat?

"Out of the ruins of political Rome, arose the great moral Empire in the 'giant form' of the Roman Church." (A.C. Flick, *The Rise of the Mediaeval Church*. 1900, p.150)

A WORLD-WIDE POWER

"And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world." (Rev.13:8)

This is not only a political power but a religious power as well. It demands worship and gets it.

It is a world-wide power. "***All the world*** wondered after the beast." (Rev.13:3)

Maybe you already know who the "beast" is.

Can you think of any world-wide political and religious power with a man at the head of it who claims to be God on earth and to be able to forgive sins? Who received its "seat" and authority from Rome? Of a church government whose leader is "wondered after" by the whole world?

HAS THE CHARACTERISTICS OF THE PREVIOUS EMPIRES

It has characteristics of the four beasts (nations) which existed before it. Look carefully.

*"And the beast which I saw was like unto a **leopard**, and his feet were as the feet of a **bear**, and his mouth as the mouth of a **lion**: and the **dragon** gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority."* (Rev.13:2)

How is the "beast" of Revelation 13 **like Babylon**? The emperors of Babylon claimed worship as gods. For man to be appreciated is great, but to be worshipped by other humans is blasphemous. The leader of the "beast" does this very thing!

How is the "beast" of Revelation 13 **like Medo-Persia**? It was a rule with the Medo-Persians that once they made a law - it stuck, and was always considered infallible. The "beast" power takes this same policy.

How is the "beast" of Revelation 13 **like Grecia**? Before his death, Alexander had ordered the Greek cities to worship him as a god. The "beast" of Revelation 13 is "like unto a leopard" because it took on the Greek philosophy and also has a leader that claims worship as God.

SPEAKS BLASPHEMY

"And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy." (Rev.13:1,2)

The beast has "the name of blasphemy" (Rev. 13:1). What is blasphemy? Again, the Bible gives its own definition:

- (a) Blasphemy is for a man to ***claim to be God***. (John 10:32,33)
- (b) Blasphemy is for anyone less than God to ***claim to forgive sins***. (Mark 2:5-11)

The very leaders of this power would both claim to be God on the earth, and claim to have power to forgive men's sins!

Daniel's "LITTLE HORN"

- 1) The "little horn" has the **"eyes of man"**. (Dan.7:8)
- 2) The "little horn" **"wears out the saints of the Most High."** (Dan.7:35)
- 3) The "little horn" speaks **"great words against the Most High."** (Dan.7:25)
- 4) Politically speaking, the "little horn" **comes up among the ten horns. (10 divisions of Rome).** (Dan.7:8)
- 5) Continues for 1260 years. (Dan. 7:25)

Revelation's "BEAST"

- The "beast" has the **"number of a man"**. (Rev.13:18)
- The "beast" **"makes war with the saints"**. (Rev.13:7)
- The "beast" **"opened his mouth in blasphemy against God"**. (Rev.13:6)
- Politically speaking, the "beast" **receives its "power, seat and great authority" from Rome (after the ten divisions were formed).** (Rev.13:2)
- Continues for 1260 years. (Rev.13:5)

You will observe that the beast of Revelation 13, and the "little horn" of Daniel 7, are alike in character, deeds and duration. Both are one and the same power! God wants to make sure that there's no mistaking who this power is, so He describes it in both prophetic books. (The biblical time code for Point 5, which appears seven times in the prophecies, will be explained later.)

A “MOTHER” CHURCH

*"And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: . . . and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and **ten horns**."* (Rev.17:1-3)

There are those heads and horns again. We've come to associate them with Rome. The Harlot is **controlling Rome**, riding it around - **making her seat on it**. Now it gets even clearer.

A woman in Bible prophecy represents a church. (Jer.6:2; Isa.51:16; 54:5,6; 2 Cor.11:2) A virgin is God's pure church. A harlot (whore) is a corrupt church.

And get this: *"And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls."* (Rev.17:4) **It's a rich church.**

She is called “the **mother** of harlots” (Rev.17:4) – she has daughter churches that play spiritual harlot with her.

She is also *“that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.”* (Rev.17:18) What **church is also a city**? And what city was reigning over the kings of the earth at the time John the apostle wrote the book of Revelation?

You work it out.

To help you, here are the main clues from the Bible:

1. Received its "seat" and authority from Rome. (Revelation 13:4)
2. Ruled the world for 1260 years (from 538 AD to 1798 AD).
3. Then received a "deadly wound" which later heals. (Rev.13:3).
4. Is both a political and a religious power, involving worship. (Rev.13:4)
5. Tampered with God's law. (Dan.7:25)
6. Has a leader who claims to be God on the earth and to be able to forgive sins (which is blasphemy). (Rev.13:1)
7. Is a mother church (daughters have come out of her). (Rev.17:5)
8. Made war with people of God - the saints. (Rev.13:7)
9. Is a world power which is wondered at. (Rev.13:3,4)
10. Has "a man" at the head of it with the number of his name (title)

being 666. (Rev.13:18)

11. Has a dreaded "mark" which, if received, will cause a person to be cast into the lake of fire and lose eternal life. (Rev.14:9,10)

By now most readers will have guessed, from the Bible, what this power is. There is only one power on the face of the earth that fits all of the Bible characteristics for it. (*For more detail, please see Appendix D*)

Did you know that from the time of the Reformation until the late 1800s the vast majority of Protestant scholars firmly believed the beast was snarling right in front of them?

Such was the understanding of Martin Luther, Philip Melanchthon, John Calvin, John Knox, the translators of the King James Bible, John Wesley, Sir Isaac Newton, Bishop J.C. Rylie, Thomas Cranmer, Matthew Henry, Charles Spurgeon, Dr. Martin Lloyd-Jones, and countless others.

Two popular theories

However, a dear man emailed me the other day with quite a different idea. "It was in the *past*," he said. "The beast was Nero."

Nero? Come off it," protested another. "The beast is a *future* Antichrist."

Sorry, but, sincere as these dear gentlemen may have been, each of them was mistaken. But, you say, how can we be sure? The answer is: by the Bible. If you accept the Bible as the Word of God - the final authority - then you CAN know. Just see for yourself...

COULD IT BE NERO?

An interesting idea. But there are three reasons why the beast could not be the Roman emperor Nero.

1. The little horn (aka the BEAST) is to gain power *after Rome is divided into ten parts* (Daniel 7:24). Nero came 500 years too soon. Notice:

- a. Lion (Babylon) - 606 to 538 BC
- b. Bear (Persia) - 538 to 331 BC
- c. Leopard (Greece) - 331 to 168 BC

- d. Dragon-like animal (Rome) - 168 BC to 476 AD
- e. Ten horns (Rome's fall and division) - after 476 AD
- f. Little horn (Nero) - 37 to 68 AD. This doesn't fit.

2. During the 7 last plagues, the BEAST and other powers will gather for the battle of Armageddon (Rev.16:13-16) immediately before the return of Jesus Christ. And those seven last plagues will also fall upon people who receive the mark of the BEAST - again, just before Jesus returns. (Rev.16:1,2)

3. Only when Jesus returns (Rev.19:11-20) to initiate the millennium (Rev. chapter 20) is the BEAST to be destroyed.

Since 2 and 3 are end-time events, the beast cannot be Nero. Nero has been dead for almost 2,000 years.

IS IT A FUTURE ANTICHRIST?

It can't be. Why? Because the little horn burst into strength ***immediately after the empire of the Caesars collapsed into ten parts***. The future-beast notion sweeps 1500 years of history under the proverbial rug by expecting the little horn to rise only near the end of time. Here is its failure:

- a. Lion (Babylon)
- b. Bear (Persia)
- c. Leopard (Greece)
- d. Dragon-like animal (Rome)
- e. Insertion of a 1500-year gap
- f. Ten horns (future revived Roman Empire)
- g. Little horn (future Antichrist)

It's easy to write fiction books about an imaginary future Antichrist or a long past dead one. But to write non-fiction works about a present beast, especially one with global influence - this is not so easy. Nor is it politically correct.

But the question you and I must always ask is...

What is the truth?

JUST 7 VERSES

(Revelation 13:11-17)

Now we are ready to track down the identity of the *second* beast in the prophecy of Revelation 13 – that is, the “earth beast”! And you are about to receive a gigantic blessing.

As already noted, the prophesied two “beasts” that will leap onto the world scene are going to play an important role together just before world history ends. If God permits, you and I are about to live through these events.

Enormous research and prayer have gone into this study. You will find this to be **A MORE DETAILED STUDY THAN ANYTHING YOU HAVE EVER READ ON THIS ISSUE**. Guaranteed.

In these pages we shall place the spotlight on **just 7 verses** of Revelation 13.

WHAT IS THE EARTH BEAST OF REVELATION 13?

By now you already know that Revelation chapter 13 explains in detail **two** “beasts” that will come onto the world stage in the last days – and interact together.

1. FIRST BEAST: “And I... saw a beast rise up **out of the sea**, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy.” (Rev.13:1)
2. SECOND BEAST: “And I beheld another beast coming up **out of the earth**; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon.” (Rev.13:11)

Concerning the first beast, we now have the broad outline. It is generally recognised as the papal Roman system which will lead the New World Order, until Jesus returns. **But what is the second beast** with lamb-like horns that will speak like a dragon?

Second beast – 2 options

Two options have been put forward:

OPTION 1:

That: (a) the *first* beast is an ORGANIZATION, a SYSTEM, but
(b) the *second* beast is a PERSON (Satan).

There are texts from which it may be inferred that Satan will appear visibly just before the Second Coming to impersonate Jesus Christ. We remember Jesus’ warning that there will appear “false christs and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.” (Matt.24:24). “And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light.” (2 Cor.11:14)

OPTION 2:

That : (a) the *first* beast is an ORGANIZATION, a SYSTEM, and
 (b) the *second* beast is an ORGANIZATION, a SYSTEM.

In other words, one beast is **not** an institution and the other a person (Satan). BOTH of these beasts are SYSTEMS that Satan will especially use in his final attempt to destroy God's remnant and thus frustrate His eternal purpose.

TO SUMMARISE: Whether Satan will appear masquerading as Jesus is not in dispute. The issue is this: Is Satan himself the second beast of the Revelation 13 prophecy? Or is the second beast another world power like the first – that is, a ruling power, political or religious, or a combination of both?

Is this important? Yes, it is.

Two reasons why this is important

1. If we have made a wrong identification and certain events occur in a way we are not expecting, or before we are expecting them to occur, we could be caught unprepared.
2. Worse, others whom we have unwittingly misled could lose their faith because they placed their trust in a mistaken interpretation of prophecy.

The relevant passage commences in Revelation 13:11 - “And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon.” Then a description of this second beast’s work follows in verses 12 to 18.

**Why the second beast
“could be” Satan**

The following points are made suggesting that a single individual, Satan, will fulfil the requirements of the second beast:

- The second beast will appear **in the form of a man** (Rev.13:17,18 - “....count the number of the [*lamb-like*] beast: for it is the number of **a man**.”)

- The second beast is also the **false prophet**, which fits Satan.
- The second beast will come out of the “*abyss*” – which appears to be his current dwelling place. “...coming up out of the earth” (Rev.13:11)
- The second beast will have power to cause ALL the world of diverse religions, with little resistance, to conform to the papal beast (Rev.13:12,15).
- The second beast will call fire down from heaven and other deceptive miracles, by power granted it from God. (Rev.13:13,14).
- The second beast will force all people to receive a mark of its name on the forehead or the number of its name on their hand (Rev.13:16)
- All the earth shall worship the second beast. (Rev.13:8)
- The second beast is cast into the lake of fire at the Second Coming, which cannot apply to a nation or system, but only to persons. (Rev.19:20)

Well, this all sounds quite reasonable. So shall we go for it?

For starters, let's consider the first three points mentioned above:

- 1. WHO IS THE “MAN” IN CHAPTER 13?**
- 2. WHO IS THE FALSE PROPHET?**
- 3. WHAT IS THE “ABYSS”?**

1

WHO IS THE “MAN” IN CHAPTER 13?

Some suggest that the “MAN” mentioned in Revelation 13:18 is SATAN. Others say the “MAN” is the PAPAL SUCCESSION headed by a man.

QUIZ: THE DANIEL-REVELATION PATTERN

1. Which Bible book provides the key to unlock Revelation’s prophecies? ***Daniel.***
2. True or false? The four different prophecies of the book of Daniel parallel one another. Each enlarges on the one preceding it, by giving extra detail. ***True.***
3. Does the book of Revelation expand on Daniel, giving extra detail? ***True.***
4. Does a pattern link the books of Daniel and Revelation? ***True.***
5. Compare the following two charts. In which chart does Revelation follow the pattern established in the book of Daniel?

CHART A:

Dan. 2	Dan. 7	Dan. 8-9	Dan. 11-12	Rev. 13	Rev. 17
Babylon	Babylon				
Medo-Persia	Medo-Persia	Medo-Persia	Medo-Persia		
Grecia	Grecia	Grecia	Grecia		
Rome	Rome	Rome	Rome	WE DON’T BASH ROME ANY MORE	
10 toes	10 horns			10 horns	10 horns

CHART B:

Dan. 2	Dan. 7	Dan. 8-9	Dan. 11-12	Rev. 13	Rev. 17
Babylon	Babylon				
Medo-Persia	Medo-Persia	Medo-Persia	Medo-Persia		
Grecia	Grecia	Grecia	Grecia		
Rome	Rome	Rome	Rome	Rome	Rome
10 toes	10 horns			10 horns	10 horns

Which of the two charts above shows the book of Revelation continuing the **PATTERN** of world powers established in Daniel – CHART A, or CHART B?

WHO IS THE “MAN” IN REV.13?

WHO IS THIS “MAN” WITH THE NUMBER 666? “Here is **wisdom**. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.” (Rev.13:18)

Is this “man” Satan? Or another? Does the Bible anywhere link “man” with a “beast” that has ten horns? Yes, it does - in Daniel chapter 7.

(a) The “man” in Daniel’s prophecy

The first mention of a “**man**” in the Daniel-Revelation prophetic pattern is in the book of Daniel.

*“I considered the [ten] horns, and, behold, there came up among them another little horn, before whom were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots: and behold, in this horn were eyes like the **eyes of MAN**, and a mouth speaking great things.... And he shall speak great words against the most High.... and... shall exalt himself, and magnify himself*

above every god, and shall speak marvellous things against the God of gods.” (Dan.7:8,25 ; 11:36)

Here is the sequence it describes for us:

- (a) **Four beasts arise successively.**
- (b) **The fourth beast (kingdom – v.23) has ten horns.**
- (c) **There arises another little horn.**
- (d) **It plucks up three of them.**
- (e) **It grows mightier than them all.**
- (f) **It blasphemes God.**
- (g) **It persecutes God’s people.**
- (h) **It changes God’s laws.**
- (i) **It rules for a time, times and a half. (In symbolic Bible prophecy, in which a “time” represents a prophetic year on the scale of “a day for a year”, this is 1260 years.)**
- (j) **It survives until destroyed at the judgment.**
- (k) **“And, behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things.” (Dan.7:8,19-20,23-25)**

The Bible doesn't say the "little horn" is an individual man, but rather that it would have "eyes like the eyes of man" (Daniel 7:8).

These ID points are explained by Daniel and by other scriptures so clearly that Bible students, comparing it with history, have no problem identifying this as the papal system with its **line of men** known as popes. (Definition of papal: the system of government pertaining to the popes)

In the book of Daniel are four parallel prophecies, each new prophecy progressively adding to the details already given.

(b) The “man” in 2 Thessalonians

The same “man” is mentioned by Paul in his second letter to the believers at Thessalonica in Greece. It is the same papal system of which Daniel spoke.

When Paul uses the expression, "**the man of sin**," in 2 Thessalonians 2:3, he is simply referring to Daniel’s "little horn" with its "eyes like the eyes of man."

Yet that same horn is called a "beast" in Revelation 13:1, and the Bible clearly tells us that a beast represents a great kingdom (Dan.7:23).

Paul writes: *“Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God... For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way.”* (2 Thess.2:3-4,7)

OBJECTION: You were saying that “he” is relating to Rome. I’ve got another understanding on the verses here. The “mystery of iniquity” is already present. Only “he who now **letteth** will let until he be taken out of the way.” Who’s the only one who can **let** sin continue? Who has got the power to **let** Satan continue? There is only one who can **let** sin keep power. Sin is only holding power because Jesus lets it.”

ANSWER: The word “*let*” here does **NOT** mean “permit” or “allow”. “*Let*” is simply an old English word meaning to “*hinder*” or “*restrain*”.

To help us understand the subject more easily, here is the text under discussion:

*1 Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him,
 2 That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand.
 3 Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and **that man of sin** be revealed, the son of perdition;
 4 Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.
 5 Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things?
 6 And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time.
 7 For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way.
 8 And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming:
 9 Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders,
 10 And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.
 11 And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie:*

12 That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness. (2 Thess.2:1-12)

“MAN” = NOT JUST ONE MAN

Did Paul ever use the expression "the man" in any of his other writings in such a way that it does not refer to only one man?

Yes. Paul wrote, "All Scripture is given by inspiration of God... That **the man of God** may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works." (2 Tim.3:15,16)

Here "the **man of God**" does not refer to only one Holy Man, but rather to **a succession of godly men** throughout history who follow the Scriptures. Paul also used the phrase, "**the minister of God**" (Romans 13:4) to refer to all civil officers throughout history who restrain evil. In Hebrews 9:7 "**the high priest**" means a succession of high priests. And the church – the long line or succession of believers through history – is spoken of as "**one new man**". (Eph.2:15)

Thus, Paul's mysterious phrase, "the **man of sin**," (aka the "little horn," and the "beast," properly refers to an **historical succession of supremely exalted men** who, contrary to the Scriptures, are at the centre of an antichrist kingdom. The "man of sin" has a dynastic meaning.

There is also a strong hint in Paul's actual words that "the man of sin" would be a succession of men. Since "*he that letteth*" (2 Thess.2:7) was a line or succession of Caesars, it would not be inconsistent to conclude that "*he that sitteth*" (v.4) would likewise be a succession of men.

LET'S SUMMARISE PAUL'S MESSAGE

1. When Jesus left earth, his followers longed for Him to return. Some were actually saying that the time of Jesus' return was at hand. Paul wrote to correct this false idea.
2. Paul said that this could not occur until several other events first took place.

3. These events were: (a) a falling away from the truth, then (b) the rise of the “man of sin” in the Christian church.
4. **The Roman Empire’s hold on power was preventing the “man of sin” from rising up in its stead.** (From knowing Daniel’s prophecy, Paul believed and taught this.) The Roman Empire had to be taken out of the way before that “man of sin” could arise in its place.

“Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a FALLING AWAY [defection from the truth] first, and **that MAN of sin** be revealed...Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple [church – Eph.2:20-22] of God, shewing himself that he is God.” (2 Thess.2:3,4)

Why does Paul say “**THAT** man”? Answer: Because it is someone they already know about. They are familiar with Daniel’s prophecy. And **Paul is reminding them of Daniel’s prophecy.**

Then Paul continues: “Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things? And ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time. For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth [“*katecho*” – is “*holding*” power”] **will let [keep, or hold power], until he be taken out of the way.** And then shall that Wicked [lawless one] be revealed.” (vv.7,8)

- * SOMETHING WAS HOLDING POWER, AND THIS WAS RESTRAINING the **Man of Sin** from appearing.
 - * Paul KNEW what the **Man of Sin** was.
 - * In his letter, he mentions that the Thessalonians KNEW what it was. But he was careful not to mention it by name, but simply reminded them of what he had already told them. (If they mentioned the Roman Empire by name, as coming to an end, it could mean trouble for them.)
 - * The **Man of Sin** could not take over until the Roman Empire was taken out of the way. The continuance of the Roman Empire was the restraining power, which prevented the **Man of Sin** from taking over. It was the FALL OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE which would bring on the **Man of Sin to rise up in its stead.**
5. The early Christians understood this. **Early Christians prayed for the continuance of the restraining Roman Empire.** Why did

they thus pray? Because they knew that only when the Roman Empire was taken out of the way could the dreaded “man of sin” arise in its place.

* Chrysostom: “*As Rome succeeded Greece, so Antichrist is to succeed Rome.*” (Chrysostom, *Homilies*, pp.388,389)

* Lactantius: “*Beseech the God of heaven that the Roman state might be preserved, lest, more speedily than we suppose, that hateful tyrant should come.*”

Why did Lactantius say this? Because he knew from the prophecies of Daniel that this coming tyrant would inflict greater persecution against them than they had suffered under pagan Rome.

* Justin Martyr says that *Christians prayed for the continuance of the restraining Roman Empire*. Why? Because only when the Roman Empire was taken away could the papal “man of sin” rise in its place.

* Tertullian: “*What is the restraining power? What but the Roman State, the breaking up of which, by being scattered into ten kingdoms, shall introduce Antichrist upon [its own ruins]?*”

* Jerome: “*Unless the Roman Empire be first desolated and Antichrist precede, Christ shall not come.*”

* Irenaeus (130-200 AD) was the disciple of the disciple of the apostle John (i.e. John’s direct spiritual grandson). (Elliott, *Horae Apocalypticæ*, Bk.3, p.92) He and the early church understood that the “letting” or restraining power impeding the development of the “man of sin”, was the Roman Empire. (Froom, *The Prophetic Faith of Our Fathers*, Vol.1, p.150)

Even in Paul’s day, however, the corruption force was developing.

“*For the mystery of iniquity doth already work*”: Paul said, “*I know that after my departure, false teachers, like savage wolves, will enter in among you, that have no mercy on the flock. Also from among yourselves will arise men who distort the truth, to draw away followers after themselves.*” (Acts 20:29,30). Even at that time, some writers were coming out with new manuscripts claiming to be written by Paul, which contained deceptive propaganda. (2 Thess. 2:2) Not only that, there were men already at work corrupting the word of God. (2 Cor. 2:17)

Did the Roman papacy fulfil this prophecy? Yes, Papal Rome was, for all practical purposes, the continuation of the Roman Empire. Notice:

Out of the ruins of political Rome, arose the great moral Empire in the “giant form” of the Roman Church. (A.C. Flick, The Rise of the Mediaeval Church. 1900, p. 150)

What ever Roman elements the barbarians and Arians left... were... put under the protection of the Bishop of Rome, who was the chief person there after the Emperor’s disappearance.... The Roman Church in this way privily pushed itself into the place of the Roman World Empire, of which it is the actual continuation; the empire has not perished, but has only undergone a transformation.... That is no mere “clever remark,” but the recognition of the true state of the matter historically, and the most appropriate and fruitful way of describing the character of this Church. It still governs the nations.... It is a political creation, and as imposing as a World-Empire, because the continuation of the Roman Empire. The Pope, who calls himself “King” and “Pontifex Maximus,” is Caesar’s successor. (Adolf Harnack, What is Christianity? New York: G.P. Putnam’s)

Papal Rome agrees:

Henry Cardinal Manning: *“The possession of the pontiffs [popes], commences with the abandonment of Rome by the emperors.”*

What did Paul prophesy? “...that man of sin [shall] be revealed, the son of perdition; Who exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that **he as God sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God.**” (2 Thess. 2:3,4. Emphasis supplied.)

In 1846, the Roman Catholic newspaper *The Universe* (June 27) gave this official description of the ceremony of the installation of the Pope:

He is borne in the pontifical chair and is placed on the High Altar, a spot consecrated by the actual presence of the body, blood, soul and divinity of a living Christ. He sits on the High Altar, using it as his footstool, and enthroned as King, he is adored as a God in the same manner as is the consecrated wafer, adored by the Cardinal Princes, who kiss his feet which rest on the altar of the supreme. **He sits in the temple of God, showing himself as if he were God.** (*The Universe* [Roman Catholic], June 27, 1846. Emphasis supplied)

Bible prophecy:

...he as God sitteth in the temple
of God, showing himself that he
is God. (2 Thess. 2:4)

Fulfilment:

“He sits in the temple
of God, showing himself as
if he were God.” (The
Catholic Universe)

Can you imagine a more blatant and unashamed acknowledgement of a prophecy fulfilled?

Bible prophecy has an uncanny knack of using the right words! You may wonder, Why would Rome so unashamedly boast about fulfilling the prophecy of 2 Thessalonians? It appears that the top leadership are arrogant enough to reveal such things because they know they have world power within their reach and believe there is nothing we can do about it.

Points 1 to 4 (above) are the **context** of Paul’s letter in 2 Thess.2. Point 5 is recorded **historical fact**.

These are solid fact – which cannot, must not, be ignored.

You can’t say, “I have a different interpretation.” You have to read Paul’s statement in its **context** – and then there’s only one way you can take it.

Any attempt to twist this passage into something else violates both the **context** of this biblical chapter and the **historical evidence** of what those early Christians believed.

Where does the mistake begin? The mistake rests on a misunderstanding of the **old English meaning** of the word “*let*”. This does not mean “permit” or “allow”. It means to “hold” power. (“*letteth*” = Greek “*katecho*” = “holding” power)

Please read this portion again:

*“Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things? And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time. For the mystery of iniquity doth already work” (The falling away from truth had already begun.) “Only he who now **letteth** [holdeth power] will **let** [will hold power], until he be taken out of the way.” Someone is “holding” power, and will continue to hold power “**until** he [who is holding power] be taken out of the way. And **then** shall that Wicked be revealed.”*

When Paul wrote, it was the Roman Empire that was holding power. The continuance of the Roman Empire was the restraining power that prevented the “man of sin” from taking over. It was the coming fall of the Roman Empire that would bring on the papal “man of sin”.

How did the early Christians know this was going to occur? They knew it from Daniel’s prophecy.

This is NOT a private interpretation. It is what Paul is saying.

With all their faults, even most modern Bible versions get this verse 7 straight:

* “For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only **the one who is impeding him will do so until** he is taken out of the way.” (Modern Language Bible)

* “As for the work this man of rebellion and hell will do when he comes, it is already going on, **but he himself will not come until the one who is holding him back steps out of the way.**” (Living Bible)

* “For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only **he who now restrains it** will do so until he is out of the way.” (RSV)

* “For the mystery of lawlessness doth already work: **only there is one that restraineth now**, until he be taken out of the way.” (English Revised Version)

* “For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; **only he who now restrains will do so until** he is taken out of the way.” (New American Standard Bible)

To say, as did our critic, “Who’s the only one who can **let** sin continue? Who’s got the power to **let** Satan continue? There is only one who can **let** sin keep power. Sin is only holding power because Jesus **lets** it”:

...This is a misinterpretation of the old English word “*let*”. That is NOT what Paul is talking about, at all!

Read the text again. Who is holding power? It is NOT the “man of sin”. Someone else is holding power and restraining the “man of sin” from appearing. Only when this first one holding power is eventually taken out of the way – only then can the “man of sin” appear. The “man of sin” is NOT yet able to appear, until AFTER the one holding power is taken out of the way.

The passage must be interpreted in the **context** in which it is written.

THE POINT OF ALL THIS

The point is that Daniel spoke of this blasphemous power that would arise from the ruins of the fourth world empire. (Dan.7:23-25) And it was this **prophecy of Daniel to which Paul was referring** in 2 Thess. 2.

From Daniel's prophecy, early Christians understood that

- (a) the Roman Empire was yet to fall;
- (b) that it would break up into ten kingdoms, and
- (c) then would arise the blasphemous power within which a man would sit claiming to be God. But this man had to wait for the Roman Empire to vacate its seat, before he could take over.

They knew all this before it even occurred! **THAT IS PROPHECY IN ACTION.**

Subsequent history **VALIDATES** this prophecy and Paul's interpretation of it. (See also Appendix F.)

This “man” in the prophecies

Daniel 7:8
“eyes of a MAN”
(think to change
God's law. v.25)

2 Thess.2:3
“MAN of sin”
(sin is transgression
of the law. 1 John 3:4)

Rev.13:18
“number of a MAN”
(his mark will mean
breaking God's law)

It is evident that the first two texts are both speaking of the same power. But what about Revelation 13?

Two beasts in Rev.13

Please keep in mind throughout our investigation that in Rev.13 there are two beasts:

1. The beast from the sea
2. The earth beast

To which beast does this man belong?

The “man”: with which “beast”?

Rev.13:18 says: “The NUMBER of the beast... is the number of a MAN.”

The question is, which beast has the number of a MAN? Is it the first beast (from the sea) or the second beast (the earth beast)?

ONE THEORY ABOUT THE “MAN”:

One theory is that **this “man” = Satan = the second beast (the earth beast)**, because:

1. Satan is called a man in Isaiah 14:16.
2. The “man” is in Rev.13:18, and this verse is part of the Rev.13:11-18 passage which describes the work of the second beast (the earth beast).
3. So this means that the second beast (the earth beast) is the “MAN” **Satan** appearing personally.

Could this theory be true?

IS THIS “MAN” SATAN PERSONALLY?:

Let’s address each of the above points.

1. Yes, in Isaiah 14:16 **Satan is called a man.**
2. Yes again, Rev.13:11-18 describes the work of the second beast (the earth beast).
3. So is “MAN” in Rev.13:18 the second beast?
4. And if Proposition 3 is correct, then might not this second beast be Satan?

Sounds reasonable.

“The number of the **beast**... is the **number** of a MAN.”(Rev.13:18)

So we have a MAN, a NUMBER and a BEAST. Is this speaking of the second beast?

Shall we be detectives? Very well, let’s ask ourselves three questions:

QUESTION 1 - THE “IMAGE”:

This same prophecy speaks of an “**image** to the beast”. “...saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an IMAGE to the beast, **which had the wound** by the sword, and did live.” (Rev.13:14)

Who is it an image of?

ANSWER:

It is an **image of the beast that had a “wound by the sword”**. Which beast is that? The answer is in Rev.13:3 – “And I saw one of his heads as it were **wounded to death**; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast.”

Verses 1 and 2 tell us this is the FIRST beast. So which beast is in verse 3? Which beast does the IMAGE belong to?

The IMAGE belongs to the FIRST beast.

QUESTION 2 - THE “MARK”:

The same prophecy also mentions the “MARK... of the beast.” (Rev.13:17)

To whom does the mark belong?

ANSWER:

Rev.14:11 – “...and they have no rest day nor night, who worship **the beast and his IMAGE**, and whosoever receiveth the MARK of his name.”

You will notice that the **same beast** that has the IMAGE, also has the MARK. As we have just discovered, the beast with the IMAGE is the FIRST BEAST – the one that had the wound.

So the IMAGE and the MARK both belong to the FIRST beast.

QUESTION 3 - “NUMBER OF A MAN”:

So the IMAGE and the MARK belong to the FIRST beast. But to whom does the NUMBER OF A MAN belong?

ANSWER:

Rev.13:17,18 – “And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the **mark**, or the **name** of the beast, or the **number** of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the **number of a man**; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six [666].”

Notice. The very same beast that

- has the **MARK**
- and the **NAME**
- also has the **NUMBER OF A MAN**.

What beast has the **IMAGE**? The **FIRST** beast.

What beast has the **MARK**? The **FIRST** beast.

What beast has the **NAME**? It's the very same beast that has the **IMAGE** and **MARK**. That's the **FIRST** beast.

What beast has the **NUMBER OF A MAN** (666)? The same beast that has the **MARK** and the **NAME**. Again, this is the **FIRST** beast (the sea beast).

Did you notice? This **man with a number** belongs to the **FIRST** beast. It is **NOT** the second beast at all. This “**MAN**” is **not** the second beast (the earth beast).

The beast may be known by his number, which is associated with a man.

To recap:

Rev.13:1 – The **IMAGE** belongs to the **FIRST** beast.

Rev.14:11 – The **IMAGE** and the **MARK** belong to the **SAME FIRST** beast.

Rev.13:17,18 – The **MARK** and the **NUMBER OF A MAN** belong to the **SAME FIRST** beast. Please notice, this is the **FIRST** beast, not the second beast.

Oh dear, we've run into a problem here. It seems that this idea that the **second** beast will appear **in the form of a man** is not correct, after all. Second beast = Satan? Not here.

Is either of the two “beasts” a literal “man”?

QUESTION: You say the “man” in Revelation 13 is not the second beast but the first beast. If the first beast can be a man, then why can’t the second beast be a man?

ANSWER: Neither the first beast nor the second beast is a man.

But doesn’t Rev. 13:18 say that “the number of the [first] beast... is the number of a man”?

Yes. But notice how the Bible interprets itself:

1. That first beast of Revelation 13 has seven heads and ten horns. And what are the seven heads? Rev.17:9 translated literally, says “...the seven heads are **seven mountains** ...and **are seven kings**.”

In the Bible, a **mountain** symbolises a **kingdom**. (Jer.51:25 ; Dan. 2:35,44) Thus, in Rev. 17:10 the beast’s seven heads “are seven kings” (denoting kingdoms – Dan. 7:17,23). Likewise, the beast’s ten horns are kings, that is, kingdoms (v.12).

2. A **woman** is seen riding the beast. In the Bible a woman symbolises a church. (Jer. 6:2; Isa.51:16 ; 54:5,6 ; 2 Cor.11:2)

These kingdoms are not sitting on top of a literal man. Neither is the church on top of a literal man. This tells us the beast itself is not literal, neither can the beast be an individual person.

In Revelation 13, neither the first beast nor the second beast is a literal person. There is no scriptural authority for making one beast a corporate ruling power, and the other not. Consistency dictates that both beasts are symbolic. These both represent ruling powers, systems.

The first beast is, however, led by a man – the office of a man, the papacy.

Compare the “man of sin” (2 Thess.) with the first beast of Rev.13

Who, then, is the “man of sin” in 2 Thessalonians? Let’s compare the FIRST BEAST of Rev.13 with the 2 Thessalonians MAN OF SIN:

<i>BIBLE CLUE</i>	<i>FIRST BEAST (Rev.13)</i>	<i>MAN OF SIN (2 Thess.2)</i>
<i>1. Motivated by Satan</i>	Receives his power, seat, and great authority from the dragon. (Rev. 13:2)	“Him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power.” (2 Thess.2:9)
<i>2. Then ALL others believe and follow</i>	“ALL the world” wonders after this beast. (Rev.13:3)	“And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie; that they ALL might be damned.” (2 Thess.2:11,12)
<i>3. Is lifted up for worship</i>	“...and they worshipped the beast.” (Rev.13:4)	“He as God sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God.” (2 Thess.2:4)
<i>4. Exalts himself greatly</i>	Has a mouth speaking great things". (Rev. 13:5)	“Who... exalteth himself above all that is called God". (2 Thess.2:4)
<i>5. Attacks whatever and whoever belongs to God</i>	Makes war on the saints. (Rev.13:7)	“Who opposeth... all that is called God,” that is, he will seek to exterminate and obliterate everything on earth which bears God's name.
<i>6. He follows Satan’s works</i>	“The dragon [SATAN] gave him his... power.” (Rev.13:2)	“...that man of sin... whose Coming is AFTER THE WORKING OF SATAN. ” (2 Thess.2:3,9)

The first beast of Rev. 13 and the Man of Sin are one and the same entity.

“AFTER...SATAN”

Notice that

- (a) Just as the world wonders “AFTER the [FIRST] beast” (Rev.13:3),
- (b) so will the Man of Sin follow “AFTER the working of SATAN” (2 Thess.2:9).

Just as in Point (a) “THE WORLD” is **not the first beast itself** – but the world just FOLLOWS the first beast - similarly in Point (b), Paul’s MAN OF SIN is **not Satan himself** – but he is “AFTER THE WORKING OF” Satan – that is, he BELONGS TO AND FOLLOWS (pertains to) Satan.

To repeat, this “man of sin” is not Satan personally, but one who DOES THE WORKS OF Satan.

The same “man” as in Daniel’s prophecies

In Revelation 13, in harmony with the pattern of increasing detail established in the book of Daniel, the ten-horned beast can be seen as papal. Its ID points unmistakably parallel the ID points provided in Daniel.

And in Revelation 13, as in Daniel, the “man” reappears – with further identification points given.

A thorough study of this Revelation 13 prophecy and its fulfilment will show that not only does the name of **the beast system itself** add up to 666, but within this papal system there exists the position, or office of “**a man**” (**a line of men**) whose name, or title, also adds up to 666.

The identification points, taken together, **fit no other power in history**. These are so clear that for centuries Bible scholars have had no trouble identifying **the papacy** as the subject of the prophecy, and **its office of a man** as that of **the papal succession**.

Two calls for wisdom

Both Revelation 13 and Revelation 17 have sections that call for careful wisdom and calculation – a wisdom that is essential to identifying the power that is waging war against Jesus Christ.

One must take note of each time the angel calls for wisdom. In both Rev.13:18 and in Rev.17:9, the computing of numbers is involved – mathematics. In Rev.13:18, the emphasis is on the **amount** of the number. In Rev.17:9 the emphasis is on the place, or **position** of the number.

Twice the Bible issues this call for wisdom. Both are linked.

Firstly, compare these two verses:

* Rev.13:18 – “Here is **wisdom**. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast; for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.”

* Rev.17:9 – “And here is the mind which hath **wisdom**. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth.” (verses 7, 8 - This is referring to the beast with 7 heads and 10 horns).

The wisdom of Revelation 13 **holds the key** to understanding wisdom in Revelation 17. Revelation 13 provides us with a key to unlocking the riddle.

You will find the same identifiers involved with the first beast of Rev.13 as you do in Revelation 17.

- It has 7 heads
- It has 10 horns
- It has name(s) of blasphemy

In both Rev.13:18 and Rev.17:8,9 the need for **wisdom** is in relation to the same beast with 7 heads and 10 horns. In Rev.13 this **wisdom** applies to understanding the **man** and his number.

As we saw on the preceding pages, that “man” **applies to the FIRST beast** of Rev.13, NOT the second beast.

Summarise the “man” claims

1. The first point - that Satan is called a man in Isaiah 14:16 – is true.
2. The second point – that Rev.13:11-18 describes the work of the second beast (the earth beast) – is likewise true.
3. The third point – that the “MAN with a number” is the **second beast**, is **NOT** true.
4. Therefore, Point 4 - that this “man” is **Satan** himself appearing as the **second beast** – is likewise **NOT** true.

The “**MAN**” belongs to the **first beast** (the sea beast), **not to the second beast** (the land beast).

2

WHO IS THE FALSE PROPHET?

We shall continue asking, Is it possible that the second beast (the land beast) is Satan?

Firstly, let's define our terms.

Second beast = false prophet

It is generally agreed that the second beast of Revelation chapter 13 (the earth beast) is mentioned elsewhere as the false prophet. They are the same entity. The following two texts make this clear:

Rev.13:11-14 – The **SECOND BEAST** “doeth great wonders... And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those *miracles* which he had power to do *in the sight of the [first] beast.*”

Rev.19:20 – “And *the beast* was taken, and with him the **FALSE PROPHET** that wrought *miracles before him*, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast.”

You will notice that in Revelation 13 it is the second beast that works the miracles. In Revelation 19 it is the false prophet that works the miracles. And in both instances this is done in the presence of the beast (that is, the first beast of Rev.13). There is general agreement that the second beast and the false prophet are **the same entity**.

(a) In Revelation chapters 12-13

Now observe the entities in the Revelation 12-13 prophecy:

REV. chs. 12 and 13 speak of:

- (a) the dragon
- (b) the beast from the sea (first beast)
- (c) the earth beast (second beast).

Who is the dragon? We answer: Satan.

Who is the beast from the sea? We answer, Rome (and her New World Order).

Who is the earth beast?Satan?

1
DRAGON
(SATAN)

2
SEA BEAST
(ROME'S NWO)

3
EARTH BEAST
(SATAN?)

Hold on... are BOTH these Satan? ...No.1 and No.3?

Did Peter have two heads?

When in Rome, my friend George Burnside was shown the preserved “head of St. Peter”. Later, in another church in Milan, he was again shown the “head of St. Peter”.

With a puzzled look, George asked, “If you have Peter’s head here, then how come they have Peter’s head in Rome?”

The custodian thought quickly, and seriously explained: “The head they have in Rome was when St. Peter was younger. But this is the head of St. Peter after he became a man.”

The same person? BOTH ST. PETER? Yes, we can smile. We know that both heads could not be of the same person.

Now what about the two entities in Revelation 12-13 (the dragon and the second beast)? Are they BOTH SATAN?

(b) In Revelation 16:13

Please keep that question in mind as we now read Revelation 16:13. “And I saw THREE unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the DRAGON, **and** out of the mouth of the BEAST, **and** out of the mouth of the FALSE PROPHET.” Here we have

- (a) the dragon (Satan)
- (b) **AND** the beast
- (c) **AND** the false prophet.

Are these **two** entities **or three**?

Are you good at mathematics? How should these figures add up:

$$1 + 1 + 1 = 2 \quad ???????$$

or: $1 + 1 + 1 = 3 \quad ?$

To settle the arithmetic, let's read this again:

“And I saw **THREE** unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the **dragon**, AND out of the mouth of the **beast**, AND out of the mouth of the **false prophet**. For they are the spirits of devils...”

Did you notice that word “**THREE**”?

1
DRAGON

2
BEAST

3
FALSE PROPHET

Does that tell us there are three separate, different entities in a group, or what? “Three”, of course! (Rev.16:13)

Does anyone have a problem with that?

(c) In Revelation 20:10

In case there is still any doubt, let's read Rev.20:10.

“And *the devil* that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the *beast* and the *false prophet* are.”

Suppose Tom jumps into a pool where Dick and Harry are. How many would you say are now in the pool? At least three, right?

THE DEVIL is in the lake of fire WITH the beast and with the false prophet. And now there are three of them. Do you notice that THE DEVIL and the FALSE PROPHET are SEPARATE ENTITIES?

REV. 20:10

THE DEVIL

BEAST

FALSE PROPHET

We have Satan AND the beast AND the false prophet. One AND two AND three.

Is this “Satan” AND “the beast” AND “Satan”?

Surely, if Satan is the first of three entities, he cannot also be the third.

1	2	3
<i>Rev.16:14</i> DRAGON	BEAST	FALSE PROPHET
<i>Rev. 20:10</i> THE DEVIL	BEAST	FALSE PROPHET
<i>Rev. chs. 12-13</i> DRAGON	SEA BEAST (the first beast)	EARTH BEAST (the second beast)

Look at this chart very carefully. If there are THREE entities – and if Satan is the first entity, then how on earth can he also be the third entity - the false prophet (= the second beast)?

Yes, these three are connected, but clearly they are three different entities.

Satan and false prophet named separately yet the same?

OBJECTION: Satan and the false prophet *are* the same person. To say that “Satan AND the Beast AND the false prophet” means that Satan and the false prophet are separate entities, is weak reasoning.

Because Colossians 2:2 says: “...the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ.” Here God and the Father are named separately, yet they are the same person.

ANSWER: At first glance, this objection looks valid. But it fails, because the **structure of the sentence** in Colossians is radically different from that of Revelation.

Before going further, please note that:

1. Inspiration cautions us that in Paul's writings "are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable, wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, to their own destruction." (2 Peter 3:15,16) It is easy for one who is inexperienced in the study of the Word to misread Paul's sentence construction. With time and experience, his writing style becomes clearer.

2. Therefore, one who is fairly new in studying the Word should be humble enough to admit a possible misunderstanding of Paul. Such humility God will bless.

3. The term "God" embraces both the Father and Christ.

(a) The Father is called God - "God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son." (John 3:16)

(b) Christ is called God - "The Word was with God and the Word was God... the Word was made flesh and dwelt among us." (John 1:1,14); "Unto the Son he saith, Thy throne O God is for ever and ever." (Heb. 1:8-10); Christ accepted Thomas' acknowledgement: "My Lord and my God" (John 20:28);

Hence, in Paul's statement "**the mystery of God**, and of the Father, and of Christ", the term "*God*" means **both** the Father and Christ.

Paul's **subject** is the word "**mystery**" - "the MYSTERY of God". Then he amplifies exactly what he means by the "mystery of God". It is the mystery "of the Father, and of Christ".

Paul is talking about: "**the mystery of God**, namely the mystery of the Father and the mystery of Christ."

We often speak this way. For example:

* the crookedness of lawyers, and [in particular] of solicitors, and of barristers"

* the beauty of water – and of rivers, and of seas

* **the wonders of the Bible**, [namely the wonders] **of the Old Testament, and** [the wonders of] **of the New Testament**

(a) The "mystery of God" is the subject, followed by

(b) who is included in that – the Father and Christ.

This grammatical construction is **nothing like** the statements in Revelation:

“And I saw THREE unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the *dragon*, and out of the mouth of the *beast*, and out of the mouth of the *false prophet*.” (Rev.16:13)

Here, **one spirit** comes out of the mouth of the dragon.

Another spirit comes out of the mouth of the beast.

And another spirit comes out of the mouth of the false prophet.

Three different spirits come out of **three different mouths** – not two.

“And the *devil* that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the *beast* and the *false prophet* are.” (Rev.20:10) Satan is cast into the fire to be WITH the beast and WITH the false prophet, who are already there before him (ch.19:20).

God burns them up separately.

CHALLENGE:

Produce one Bible text stating that the devil and the false prophet are the SAME entity. **Otherwise** honestly admit that this notion is **not** scriptural, but only conjectural.

Satan’s symbol is the dragon

Apart from that, Satan’s symbol has always been the dragon. The book of Revelation keeps calling Satan the dragon. So we don’t need a beast to represent that dragon. The term “dragon” is adequate.

Clearly, the second beast of Rev.13 (also called the false prophet) is not Satan. It is a separate entity – the third entity in this threesome.

Satan’s role: false prophet or false Christ?

To confirm this further, Jesus spells out a difference. He says: “There shall arise false christs **AND** false prophets.” These two are different.

When SATAN **impersonates Christ**, he will be the **false Christ**. And he will put himself forward to be worshipped as Jesus Christ.

By contrast, the second beast (false prophet) **will not focus worship on itself** – except as it becomes an image of **the first beast**. (Rev.13:15) It has stature only in its relation to the first beast. The focus of worship is on the first beast. (See verses 12,14) “And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him [the first beast] whose names are not written in the book of life...” (v.8)

Thus the SECOND BEAST speaks not as a false Christ (drawing worship toward itself as the chief entity of the two), but as a **false prophet** (directing worship to another as being the chief).

Revelation 13 keeps telling us that **of the two beasts, the more important one is the first beast**. Notice:

- v.8 – “all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him [the first beast].”
- v.12 – “exerciseth the power of the first beast”
- v.12 – “causeth... to worship the first beast”
- v.14 - “in the sight of the [first] beast”
- v.14 – “make an image to the [first] beast, which had the wound”

It is unscriptural to think that the second beast (the false prophet) is more important than the first beast. These texts state clearly that the first beast is pre-eminent, above the second beast.

We know that Satan is supreme above all evil powers – and that he will ever focus upon himself. (Isaiah 14:12-14 ; Matthew 4:9) By contrast, the second beast will focus worship on the first beast. It is the first beast that is pre-eminent – not the second beast.

This is another evidence that the second beast (aka the false prophet) is not Satan.

Something to bear in mind. In Revelation, “beast”, “false prophet” and “harlot” are all symbols of institutions (ruling systems, secular or religious). The false prophet in these prophecies **is no more a literal person, than is the harlot woman** of chapter 17. Both are symbols. Both represent systems.

3

WHAT IS THE “ABYSS”?

Did people in Bible times (John included) believe the earth was flat, with a bottomless hole in it? And does the biblical word “*abussos*” (abyss) indicate this? And will Satan come out from the earth?

IT IS CLAIMED: People living during Bible times thought the earth was flat - that the ocean would ‘drain away’ if the world was spherical – that a bottomless pit would be created if a person dug a hole all the way through the basin of the earth. Without a bottom, a person could fall into a pit and never be seen again. Understanding John’s mind set helps us understand the biblical term ‘bottomless pit’ or ‘abyss’. (Larry Wilson, *Warning: Revelation is About to be Fulfilled*, pp.64,65) This is Satan’s abode under the earth, and Satan will come out from there as the second beast of Revelation 13.

IN REALITY: Sorry – but the above statement is not just historically wrong, it is also Scripturally wrong. 100 percent wrong.

Did John believe the earth was flat, with a bottomless hole in it? Not at all. Furthermore, the biblical word “*abussos*” (abyss) has to do with WATER - not dry earth, but a watery waste, separate from the earth.

(a) In the Bible: Firstly, let’s be clear on this. God’s revelation to us was not dependent on John’s “mind set”. John’s private beliefs did not determine what went into the book of Revelation.

1. Like all Bible prophets before him, John, as he wrote, was totally under the control of the Holy Spirit. “... no prophecy is of private interpretation. For the prophecy came not... by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.” (2 Pet.1:21) No faulty human reasoning came into it.

2. John wrote exactly what he was told. (Rev.1:1)
3. Not one word was factually incorrect. (Rev.21:5 ; 22:6)
4. Not one word could be changed. (Rev.22:18)

Did John believe the earth was flat?

As already mentioned, John did **not** believe the earth to be flat. He believed in the Old Testament Scriptures, which contain accurate, up-to-date scientific knowledge.

1. That the shape of the earth is not flat, but round. (“...the circle of the earth.” - Isaiah 40:22)
2. That the earth rotates. Just as a ball of clay is rotated to receive the imprint of an engraved seal, so is the rotating earth imprinted with life-giving rays as it turns toward the sun. (“It is turned as clay to the seal. – Job 38:14).
3. That God “hangeh [Hebrew: “*talah*” –“*suspends*”] the earth upon nothing.” (Job 26:7).

So John knew that our earth is round, rotates, and is suspended in space.

Neither was John writing for pagans who might nurture a false idea about the geography of the earth. He was writing for God’s “servants”, who had the Old Testament Scriptures and knew the truth about the earth. Notice **the chain of communication**: “The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to show his servants... by his angel unto his servant John.” (Rev.1:1)

When His people already know the earth is spherical, do you think God would change what He has revealed in Isaiah and suddenly introduce a pagan myth about the earth?

What about such expressions as “the four corners of the earth” and “the four winds of heaven”?

Such colloquialisms are even used today, even though we know our earth to be a sphere. These expressions simply mean “the four points of the compass” – north, south, east and west.

(b) Historically: We have been taught at school that people anciently thought the earth was flat. But this is wrong. The earth was known to be a sphere, surrounded by the heavens. As early as 2000 BC, this was knowledge common to ancient Egypt, China, Britain, Guatemala, Bolivia, Greece, India, Sumeria, Babylon, Assyria, Asia Minor, and so on. (See Jonathan Gray, *Dead Men's Secrets*, ch.11)

We now have the benefit of at least fourteen maps whose origins reach into Bible times, and which show that our ancestors:

1. possessed a knowledge of cartography comparable to our own.
2. knew the correct shape and size of the earth.
3. used spherical trigonometry in their mathematical measurements.
4. used ultramodern methods of projection (exact coordinates).

Some of these maps, whose origins date back to Bible times, were formed on a spherical grid. (*Ibid.*, ch.3)

The flat earth theory is an unbiblical concept spawned during the Dark Ages, after the earlier knowledge was lost.

“Abussos” in Bible means “watery deep”

From the original Greek word “*abussos*” we derive the English word “*abyss*”. What did Bible writers mean by the term “*abussos*”?

To understand the biblical meaning of “*abussos*” we need to follow it (or its Hebrew equivalent) through both the Old and New Testaments. (As we know, the Old Testament was first written basically in Hebrew and the New Testament in Greek.)

The Greek word “*abussos*” is identical to the Old Testament Hebrew “*teh-home*” (abyss), which means a surging mass of water, especially the deep (the main sea, or the subterranean water supply); depth. (*Strong's Concordance* 8415)

Although “*abussos*” can indicate (a) sea and (b) subterranean water basins, and though these “fountains of the great deep” also encompass volcanic fire under land or sea, the expression “bottomless” (Greek: “*abussos*”) “pit” (“*phrear*”) indicates a deep water well. Symbolically, then, it is out of deep water that the destroyer of Revelation 9 comes, NOT out of the earth. **The emphasis is on “WATER”, not on “earth”.**

The Greek *The Hebrew* *The English*
 “ABUSSOS” = “TEH-HOME” = “WATERY DEEP”

“Abussos” and “*teh-home*” are interchangeable.

The following sample of texts illustrates its meaning:

- * Genesis 1:2 – “And the earth was without form, and **void**; and darkness was upon the **face of the deep** [*teh-home*]. And the Spirit of God moved upon the **face of the waters**.”
- * Genesis 7:11 – “**fountains of the great deep** [*teh-home*] were broken up.”
- * Psalm 42:7 – “**Deep** [*teh-home*] calleth unto **deep** at the noise of thy **waterspouts**: all thy **waves** and thy **billows** are gone over me.”
- * Isaiah 51:10 – “Art thou not it which hath dried **the sea, the waters of the great deep** [*teh-home*], that hath made the depths of **the sea** a way for the ransomed to pass over?”
- * Ezekiel 26:19,20 – “When I make thee a **desolate** city, like the cities that are **not inhabited**; when I shall bring up **the deep** [*teh-home*] upon thee, and **great waters** shall cover thee.”
- * Habukkuk 3:10 – “The overflowing of **the water** passed by: **the deep** [*teh-home*] uttered his voice, and lifted up his hands on high.”

In these passages, where “*teh-home*” appears in the Hebrew, the Greek Bible uses the equivalent word “*abussos*” – the same word that our English translators have rendered as “bottomless”, as for a pit, in Revelation.

Allowing the Bible to explain itself, the term “*teh-home*” (“*abussos*”) signifies water – whether physical or symbolic. In two of these instances (Genesis 1:2 and Ezekiel 26:19) it is associated with **physical or spiritual desolation, emptiness**.

“Abussos” not dry-earth related but water related

IMPORTANT: The word “*abyss*” is not earth-orientated, but water-orientated. It builds on the thought expressed in Isaiah 57:20 – “...the **wicked** are like the **troubled sea**, when it cannot rest, whose **waters** cast up mire and dirt.”

Its equivalent Hebrew term “*teh-home*” derives from the root word “*hoom*” – to make an uproar, or agitate greatly, destroy, move, make a noise – as **referring to the source of all evil things.**

In the Bible, far from being dry earth, “*the abyss*” refers to a **WATERY** waste. This watery waste represents the abode of Satan and his evil ones – and the source of all evil things. But remember, this only **a symbol.**

-
1. Again, “*abussos*” = “*teh-home*” = “*watery deep*”.
(rendered
in Revelation
“bottomless” pit)
 2. Therefore:
Bottomless pit = **watery deep** = **The sea**
(or subterranean
waters)
 3. Therefore:
Beast = **Beast** = **Beast** = **(In Rev.13:1)**
out of the **out of the** **out of the** **first**
bottomless pit **watery deep** **sea** **beast**
-

“Abyss” is not the deep sea in the New Testament, but something different?

QUESTION: To prove that the “*abyss*” means **watery deep** you only quoted mostly Old Testament texts. **But** there are New Testament texts where that wouldn’t make sense. For example, Jesus was going to cast the unclean spirits out of a person and they pleaded with Him not to cast them into the abyss.

Now, in your translation it would be to cast them into the deep sea. Why would Jesus cast these unclean spirits into the deep sea?

ANSWER: Because the Scripture says he did!

Jesus was about to cast the unclean spirits out of a person. “And they [the devils] besought him that he would **not** command them to go out into the **deep** [*abussos*, *bottomless* (pit)].” But when the devils entered into a herd of pigs, those pigs “ran violently down a steep place into the **sea**” anyway! (Matt.8:32)

That’s the irony of God, for you! They cry, “Don’t send us into the abyss!” And He does just that to them! Literally – exactly like the symbol!

Here the consistent Bible symbolism of “*abussos*” meaning the sea, was enacted out in real life! By the way, that’s a New Testament example.

In answer to the question, the reason I allowed the Old Testament mostly to explain this symbolism was that it contains so many very clear texts on that subject. But the New Testament also clearly defines what “*abussos*” (bottomless pit) means. Please notice:

The “**BOTTOMLESS PIT**” = the deep “**SEA**”:

Rev.13:1,3	Rev. 17:3,7,8
The beast with	The beast with
* “ seven heads and ten horns ”	* “ seven heads and ten horns ”
* “the name of blasphemy ”	* “full of names of blasphemy ”
* after whom “all the world wondered ”	* “upon whom “the earth shall wonder” ”
* Is seen to “rise up out of out of the SEA.”	* Rises out of “the BOTTOMLESS PIT ”

Without doubt, these are the very same beast, rising from the “**sea**” (the “**bottomless pit**”).

That’s as clear a parallel as you can get! The very same beast is described – and it rises from the “**sea**” = “**bottomless pit**”. Here you have an excellent New Testament example, if ever there was one – and, better still, it’s in the book of Revelation.

“*Bottomless pit*” = “*Watery deep*”. **Definitions don’t change in midstream.** “I am the Lord, I change not.” (Mal.3:6) When our Lord gives us a symbol, its meaning remains the same throughout the Bible.

Here is another New Testament evidence. The woman **sitting on** the beast that rises from the BOTTOMLESS PIT is thereby “**sitting on MANY WATERS**” (Rev.17:1,15) Again, the “**bottomless pit**” equates with “**many waters**”.

Any notion that the “abyss” (“bottomless” pit) might be something else is an assumption **against** both Old Testament and New Testament scripture.

It was objected (in the “abyss” question above) that I “quoted only Old Testament texts, but that there are New Testament texts that will show that that wouldn’t make sense.”

Think now. Isn’t this type of objection like that of an opponent of God’s law who downgrades Old Testament texts which uphold God’s Ten Commandments “because,” he says, “the New Testament has changed the Ten Commandment law”? To even think that the New Testament cancels or contradicts the Old, borders on dangerous reasoning. At the very least, it’s unbiblical, and not of God.

We have seen that **both the Old and New Testaments** are consistent in their definition of “*abyss*” as *watery deep*. **Any imagined difficult text** must fit into that divinely revealed symbolism.

The beast that comes out of the “bottomless pit” (watery deep, the sea) **is not the second beast** - because the second beast comes up **out of the earth**.

The Hebrew scholar incident

OBJECTION: You are wrong to state that the Old Testament *teh-home* (watery deep) is interchangeable with the New Testament *abussos* (abyss).

I have talked to an expert on Hebrew who states that “*teh-home*” in the Old Testament Hebrew and “*abyss*” in the New Testament Greek, are two separate words which should not be used interchangeably for the purpose of interpreting their meanings.

IN REALITY: Knowing the same Hebrew scholar to whom the objector had spoken, a man by the name of Peter Golden, I phoned him myself to learn what had really been discussed.

My question was, “When Rod spoke to you, Peter, what did he actually ask you regarding the Hebrew word *teh-home* and the Greek word *abussos*? Did he ask you if they were interchangeable?”

I wrote down the scholar’s reply as we spoke. This is how Peter recalled the conversation:

“Rod presented to me the thought that the Greek word “*abussos*” only occurred in the New Testament. I told him that if it’s only a New Testament word, then it’s probably not the same. I couldn’t really answer it without doing further research.”

“Did you actually tell Rod that?” I said, knowing that Peter would be very careful to maintain accuracy, in his response to Rod’s query.

“Yes. The impression given to me [by Rod] was that the word doesn’t occur in the Old Testament, therefore it would be too much of a jump, to be the same.”

“Well, it actually does occur in the Old Testament, I replied. “As you know, Peter, Greek happens to be my second language. And I’ve been through this carefully. In each place where the Hebrew uses the word *teh-home* [*watery deep*], the Septuagint [Greek Bible] uses the word *abussos*.” (The Septuagint was the translation of the Hebrew Bible into Greek by 70 Hebrew scholars in the 3rd century BC.)

“Oh,” said Peter, “If the Greek *abussos* is translated into the Old Testament book of Genesis, that’s a very different situation. I wasn’t absolutely sure whether one word was only in the Hebrew and one in the Greek. But the Septuagint changes that.”

What does this mean? Simply that Rod was mistaken about the matter. The Hebrew word *teh-home* is indeed interchangeable with *abussos*. Both are used in the Bible to mean “*watery deep*”.

Do they have the same meaning? The way the Bible has chosen to use them, they do!

Would you like some concrete examples?

Very well, on the next few pages you can compare for yourself some typical samples of interchangeability between *teh-home* and *abussos* in the Hebrew and Greek Bibles.

In the Old Testament

As an authority, we shall consult the Septuagint, the Greek translation of the Old Testament produced between 300 and 200 BC, which was used by the early apostles. This Greek translation was produced because many Jews spread throughout the empire were beginning to lose their Hebrew language. So 70 to 72 Jewish scholars were commissioned during the reign of Ptolemy Philadelphus to carry out the task of translation. The term “Septuagint” means seventy in Latin, and the text is so named to the credit of these 70 scholars.

The Septuagint was also a source of the Old Testament for early Christians during the first few centuries AD. Many early Christians spoke and read Greek, thus they relied on the Septuagint translation for most of their understanding of the Old Testament. The New Testament writers also relied heavily on the Septuagint, as a majority of Old Testament quotes cited in the New Testament are quoted directly from the Septuagint. (Others are quoted from the Hebrew texts)

We shall now display a number of texts in the Hebrew Old Testament where the word *teh-home* appears. Immediately below that we shall display the very same text from the Greek translation of the Old Testament, followed by the same Old Testament text in the English King James Bible. (The relevant word will appear enlarged or in bold format.)

The Hebrew reads from right to left, while the Greek and English read from left to right.

Genesis 1:2

2 ב והארץ היתה תהו ובהו וחשך על-פני תהום
ורוח אלהים מרחפת על-פני המים:

2 η δε γη ην αορατος και ακατασκευαστος και
σκοτος επανω της **αβυσσου** και πνευμα θεου
επεφερετο επανω του υδατος

2 And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of **THE DEEP**. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the *waters*.

You will notice that the Hebrew **תְּהוֹם** (*teh-home*) is interchangeable with the Greek **αβυσσος**. Yes, *teh-home* is translated as *abussos*.

Gen 7:11

11 יא בשנת שש-מאות שנה לחיי-נח בחדש השני

כל-מעיינות **תְּהוֹם** רבה וארבת השמים נפתחו: בשבעה-עשר יום לחדש ביום הזה נבקעו

11 εν τω εξακοσιοστω ετει εν τη ζωη του νωε του δευτερου μηνος εβδομη και εικαδι το υ μηνος τη ημερα ταυτη ερραγησαν πασαι αι πηγαι της **αβυσσου** και οι καταρρακται του ουρανου ηνεωχθησαν

11 In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the *fountains* of **THE GREAT DEEP** broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened.

Isa.51:10

10 י הלוא את-היא המחרבת ים מי **תְּהוֹם** רבה השמה מעמקי-ים דרך לעבר גאולים:

10 η ερημουσα θαλασσαν υδωρ **αβυσσου** πληθος η θεισα τα βαθη της θαλασσης οδον διαβασεως ρυομενοισ

10 Art thou not it which hath dried the sea, the waters of **THE GREAT DEEP**; that hath made *the depths of the sea* a way for the ransomed to pass over?

Ezekiel 26:19

19 יט

כי כה אמר אדני יהוה בתתי אתך עיר נחרבת : כערים אשר לא-נושבו בהעלות עליך את-**תְּהוֹם** 20 כ והורדתיך את-יורדי בור אל-עם עולם וכסוך המים הרבים חיים: את-יורדי בור למען לא תשב ונתתי צבי בארץ והושבתיך בארץ תחתיות כחרבות מעולם

19 οτι ταδε λεγει κυριος κυριος οταν δω σε πολιν ηρημωμενην ως τας πολεις τας μη κατοικηθησομενας εν τω αναγαγειν με επι σε την **αβυσσον** και κατακαλυψη σε υδωρ πολυ

19 For thus saith the Lord GOD; When I shall make thee a desolate city, like the cities that are not inhabited; when I shall bring up **THE DEEP** upon thee, and *great waters* shall cover thee;

Habakkuk 3:10

10 יִרְאוּךְ יַחֲלִיו הַרִים זֶרֶם מִיִּם עֲבַר נָתַן **תְּהוֹם**
קוֹלוֹ רוֹם יִדְהוּ נִשְׂא:

10 οψονται σε και ωδινησουσιν λαοι σκορπιζων υδατα
πορειας αυτου εδωκεν η **αβυσσος** φωνην αυτης
υψος φαντασιας αυτης

10 ... the overflowing of *the water* passed by: **THE DEEP** uttered his voice, and lifted up his hands on high.

Did you notice?: **תְּהוֹם** (teh-home) = **αβυσσος** (abussos)

In the New Testament

Does this change in the New Testament? What happens when the Greek New Testament term *abussos* (*abyss*) is translated into Hebrew?

There follow now some examples in the book of Revelation:

- (a) firstly from the English Bible; then
- (b) secondly from the Greek Bible, and
- (c) thirdly from the Hebrew Bible.

Rev.9:1

...and to him was given the key of the **bottomless pit**.

και εδοθη αυτω η κλεις του φρεατος της αβυσσου

תְּהוֹם וַיִּתֵּן לּוֹ אֶרְצָה מִן־הַשָּׁמַיִם נֶפֶל כּוֹכַב וְאֶרָא הַחַמְיָשִׁי הַמֶּלֶא

Rev.17:8

... and shall ascend out of the **bottomless pit**

και μελλει αναβαινειν εκ της αβυσσου

רָאָתָה אֲשֶׁר הַחַיָּה הַמִּזְוָה תַעֲלֶה וְעוֹד לָהּ חִלְפָה אֲחֵרִי כֵן בְּאֶרֶץ הַיָּתֵה עֵינֶי תִהְיֶה

You see, it matters not whether we translate the Greek *abussos* into Hebrew, or in reverse, the Hebrew *teh-home* into Greek – the result is the same.

Again, **תִּהְיֶה (teh-home) = αβυσσος (abussos)**. In the Bible, they are definitely interchangeable. Period.

Did you notice? Both of those *abussos* (*abyss*) texts in Revelation say that the “bottomless pit” is *teh-home* (*watery deep*). The claim that *abussos* (*watery deep*) means the “earth” instead of the “sea” is nonsense.

How could the objector have got this so wrong?

If you haven’t already worked it out, here was his reasoning:

1. Satan allegedly comes out of the “bottomless pit” (*abussos*).
2. That bottomless pit (*abussos*), assumes the objector, is “in the earth” (the dry earth).
3. The assumption continues that the second beast (Rev.13:11) which comes “out of the earth” must be Satan making his future appearance “out of the earth”.

But, as much as he wants that second beast to be Satan himself, this attempt to twist the second beast into Satan is absolute nonsense!

Again we have seen that **both the Old and New Testaments** are consistent in their definition of “*abyss*” as *watery deep*.

The beast that comes out of the “bottomless pit” (*watery deep*, the sea) **is not the second beast** - because the second beast comes up **out of the earth**.

That's the Bible symbolism. "Keep an open mind on it?" **Not if you want to believe the Bible!**

Smoke from bottomless pit refers to land, not sea?

Here is a question that has not been raised, but because it might be asked, I am pre-empting it with an answer from the Bible.

QUESTION: Regarding "smoke from the bottomless pit" (Rev.9:2), wouldn't smoke come out of the earth, rather than out of the sea?

ANSWER: Remember, this is symbolism. This smoke is **not physically** coming out of the sea. **The sea is symbolic.**

Now, shall we let the Bible explain itself?

1. The **beast** comes out of the **bottomless pit**. (Rev.17:8)
2. A **woman** is sitting **on the beast**. (Rev.17:3)
3. This **woman** is sitting **on many waters**. (Rev.17:1,15)

One may ask, how can that woman on the beast be sitting on WATERS?

Answer: Because that same beast is coming out of the SEA. (Rev.13:1)

The bottomless pit = the sea. (Compare Rev.17:8 and Rev.13:1.)

Now please notice:

- The woman sitting on many WATERS. (Rev.17:1,15)
- The SMOKE of her burning. (Rev.18:9,18)

To help us think straight, here are three easy questions:

1. Where is the woman? On many waters (the sea, i.e. the bottomless pit).
2. Where is the smoke seen? Coming from the woman on many waters – the sea.
3. Where is the smoke coming from? Answer: the sea, i.e. the bottomless pit.

The smoke is coming from the bottomless pit, where the woman is.
(This is all symbolic, of course.)

What does this mean?

The bottomless pit (the troubled sea) represents the restlessness, desolation and chaos of the crowded, struggling mass of humanity, “the peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues” within Satan’s domain. (Compare Rev.17:15; Jer.50:41-42; Isa.17:12,13; 57:20; 27:1)

Smoke out of this bottomless pit (the troubled sea) indicates burning - destruction. (Rev.18:9,18)

This is a harmonizing of scripture, which requires no private interpretation, no guessing, no speculation.

Footnote: According to Romans 10:7, during the time in which Jesus was **dead for our sins, and counted among the wicked**, until His resurrection, He was symbolically in the “*abyss*” (**deep**), which we have seen to represent **Satan’s domain**. Please note that in this text, “*abyss*” is not defined. It says only that Jesus (symbolically speaking) was there. The symbolic language, “**Deep** calleth unto **deep** at the noise of thy waterspouts: all thy waves and thy billows are gone over me” (Psa.42:7), well describes that occasion.

In Gen.1:2 (before Creation) and Rev.20:1 (during the millennium) “*abyss*” denotes the whole planet in its desolate, chaotic, lifeless state.

Symbolically, then, where is Satan?

That brings us back to the question, Could the second beast be Satan?
Does Satan come up out of the earth?

The Scripture, speaking of Satan, says:
“In that day the Lord... shall punish leviathan the piercing **serpent**, even leviathan that crooked **serpent**; and he shall slay **the dragon that is in the sea.**” Isa.27:1

SO IN SYMBOLIC BIBLE IMAGERY, WHERE IS SATAN? Answer:
“**in the sea.**”

If Satan was going to come up, from where would he come up? **From the sea – from the chaos of the watery abyss.**

Therefore, we should expect the second beast that comes up **out of the earth**, to be something else. **Since this second beast cannot be Satan, then what might it be?**

Wrong first premise = wrong conclusion

To understand the term “bottomless pit” we do not have to guess John’s mind set. The Lord tells us to compare scripture with scripture if we wish to arrive at a correct understanding. (Isa.28:10 ; 1 Cor.2:13) Otherwise our conclusions, no matter how seemingly logical, will be wrong.

If my philosophical premise is flawed to start with, then my conclusion will be flawed. To assume that John’s imagery stemmed from **his mind set** of a flat earth with a hole in it, will not give us the correct meaning of “*abussos*”.

There’s a danger in adopting a desired conclusion because it seems good, then working backwards to try and find texts that “prove” that desired conclusion. And one takes leaps of fallacies in logic - all to support the desired conclusion.

Satan’s spirits want to trap us with “biblical” enchantments

The Bible warns us against taking on board ideas (e.g. for bottomless pit, or anything else for that matter) which are unchristian in origin. To do so is dangerous, because it will not be easy to get free from teachings based on these mistaken concepts. Why? Because the enchanting, mysterious and crafty spirits who inspired these pagan ideas will chain our minds tenaciously – even though we may quote the Bible.

Persons who decide in favour of such teachings, run the risk of receiving “a strong delusion, that they should believe a lie.” (2 Thess.2:11)

God's intelligence is available to us

God is a God of Intelligence. His intelligence is complete and infinite, exhaustless, and measureless. He desires to make that intelligence available to His servants as they battle Satan and his host.

Intelligence in war is of the utmost consequence. **God wants His people to be the best informed people on the planet**, as the great drama between Christ and Satan plays itself out through world powers.

4

12 IMPORTANT BIBLE REQUIREMENTS FOR THE SECOND BEAST

Καὶ εἶδον ἄλλο θηρίον ἀναβαῖνον ἐκ τῆς γῆς, καὶ εἶχεν
 And I saw another beast coming up out of the earth and it had
 κέρατα δύο ὅμοια ἀρνίῳ, καὶ ἐλάλει ὡς δράκων.
 horns two like a lamb and it spoke as a dragon.

There are certain keys to understanding Bible prophecy:

1. Let the Bible interpret itself.
2. Never assume.
3. Don't try to read into passages meanings that aren't there.

We must ask ourselves, Is every word or omission of a word, in the Bible important?

And the answer has to be, Of course it is!

**The second beast
must fulfil ALL of
these biblical specifications –**

Important: In discovering the truth about the second beast of Rev.13, we must take into account:

- (a) the context
- (b) the Bible definition of each term used
- (c) EVERY one of the following specifications:

1. The term “out of the earth”
2. The term “beast”
3. The term “another”
4. The term “coming up”
5. “Two horns”
6. “Like a lamb”

7. “As a dragon”
8. Is subordinate to the first beast
9. Will promote the first beast over itself
10. “He causeth all” (forces all the world)
11. Is authorised and empowered by the first beast
12. Demonstrates signs and wonders; fire from heaven

In addition, there are several other specified characteristics which we shall address later.

1. THE TERM “OUT OF THE EARTH”

(“I saw another beast coming up **out of the earth.**” – Rev.13:11)

ἐκ τῆς γῆς

“*Out of the earth*”. Just four simple words. But they are vital to our understanding of the second beast. So we shall devote a major portion of this chapter to this one specification.

These are the points we shall address:

- (a) The fact that “earth” has two distinct meanings.
- (b) What does the Bible mean by “INTO the earth”?
- (c) How does the Bible apply the term “OUT OF the earth”?
- (d) How does the Bible contrast “earth” against “sea”?
- (e) Are “out of the SEA” and “out of the EARTH” the same?
 - i. Don’t confuse symbols and explanations.
 - ii. “RISE UP ON” and “COME UP OUT OF” are not the same.

IT IS CLAIMED: There is a verse linking Satan directly, as being a viable option for the earth beast.

When Satan rebelled, he was cast out of heaven and “**INTO THE EARTH**”. (Rev. 12:9). The earth beast will come “**OUT OF THE EARTH**”. (Rev.13:11)

It can’t therefore be ruled out, that Satan may come out of his earthly dwelling place. “Earth” in both verses, is the same Greek word: *ge*.

IN REALITY: Sounds reasonable? Perhaps. After all, “*earth*” (both in Greek and English) is one word.

Stop right there! We’ve tripped onto a problem.

(a) “Earth” has two distinct meanings

Yes, like it or not, the Bible gives that same word “*earth*” (*ge*), two distinctly different meanings.

- 1. Firstly, as a ***planet*** in contrast to heaven: “And there was war in heaven... he was cast out into the earth [meaning into this world].” ((Rev. 12:7,9)
- 2. Secondly, as the ***dry land portion*** of our planet in contrast to sea: “inhabiters of the earth, and of the sea”; “out of the sea... [then] out of the earth”. (Rev.12:12 ;13: 1,11)

Sorry to be a spoil sport, but we can’t mix these two meanings. We can’t say that **because** Satan was cast down to ***planet*** earth, then the beast that rises out of the ***ground*** may be Satan.

The truth is, you cannot reason from Point 1 above, to Point 2. They are not the same.

Let me illustrate:

1. Jacques flew **INTO THE COUNTRY** from France.
2. A man has just moved **OUT OF THE COUNTRY** to live in town.

You ask, “Who moved out of the country?”

“What a silly question!” I retort. “It must be Jacques.”

“Why Jacques?”

“Because he came INTO THE COUNTRY. And a man has moved OUT OF THE COUNTRY! Who else but Jacques!”

All made wonderfully possible by having the same word “country”. Oh, okay, forget that the two “country”s have a different meaning.

Or imagine that my boss says to me. “Please **file** these documents.”

“No problem, boss,” I reply. So, to take care of that task, I whip out my nail **file** (for manicuring fingernails).

You cast an odd look toward me. So I justify my action with something like,

“It can’t be ruled out that I’ll be able to file the documents with my fingernail file. It’s the same English word ‘file’ in both cases.”

Awesome logic.

So a man gives his explanation – if such it can be called – that because Satan was cast from heaven to **planet earth**, the beast that rises out of the **earth (soil, land or ground)** must be Satan!

Muddled thinking? You be the judge. Indeed, you may ask, why on earth would a supposedly intelligent person use such an argument? The answer is, that good or bad, it has to be used! It might just salvage the shaky “second-beast-is-Satan” theory.

And I’m Alice in Wonderland.

(b) What does the Bible mean by “INTO the earth”?

The Greek word translated “INTO” is “*eis*”. This primarily means “TO”, but can mean “INTO”. Letting Scripture explain itself, we receive

confirmation (in Rev.12:13) that “INTO the earth” is the same as “UNTO” or “UPON” the earth: “when the dragon saw that he was cast UNTO [upon] the earth”.

Again, we read in Rev.5:6 about “the seven Spirits of God sent forth INTO all the earth”. This does not refer to under the earth, or inside the earth, but simply to God’s Spirit being sent to the people **on** the surface of the earth.

Again, in Rev.8:5,7 “INTO the earth” is comparable to “UPON the earth”.

Numerous texts in Scripture tell us that “INTO” or “IN” the earth means, simply, “TO”, or “UPON” the earth. For example,

- * “unto all people, nations, and languages, that dwell IN all the earth.” (Dan.6:25)
- * “their sound went INTO all the earth, and their words UNTO the ends of the world.” (Romans 10:18). (“*Earth*” and “*world*” are **used interchangeably**. For example: “The *earth* is the Lord’s and the fullness thereof, the *world* and they that dwell therein.” – Psalm 24:1. “go forth unto the kings of the *earth* and of the whole *world*.” – Rev.16:14) And again, INTO means UNTO.
- * Jesus said He had “come INTO the world”, that is, He had come to live with us on the surface of the earth, not inside or under it.(John 3:17,19; 6:14 ; 9:39 ; 16:28 ; 17:18 ; 18:37)
- * “Go ye INTO all the world and preach... to every creature”. (Mark 16:15)

(c) How does the Bible apply the term “OUT of the earth”?

QUESTION: “And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth.” (Rev.13:11)

Does “out of the earth” mean “coming out of the abyss”? And does this imply Satan coming out?

ANSWER: We need to ask, Is there any Scriptural precedent by which we can understand the expression “out of the earth”? Indeed there is. Prior to Revelation 13, this expression (or its equivalent) is used five times:

1. It is applied to Jesus: “For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root OUT OF A DRY GROUND.” (Isa.53:2)
2. It is applied to a godly leader, who “shall be... as the tender grass springing OUT OF THE EARTH” (2 Sam.23:4)
3. It is applied to God’s truth – “Truth shall spring OUT OF THE EARTH”. (Psalm 85:11)

These provide a precedent for the expression “OUT OF THE EARTH” in Revelation 13. (And in every case the text refers to a person or quality that is of God.)

4. The expression “OUT OF THE EARTH” is also used once in our English Bible, in the book of Daniel. We shall refer to this a little further down.

Think about this question: Are there any lies in the Bible? The answer, of course, is Yes.

The very first lie was, “Ye shall not surely die.” (Gen.3:4)

Who said that? Satan.

Here is another lie: “I saw gods ascending out of the earth”. (1 Samuel 28:13)

Who said that? Satan’s witch.

Was that a true statement? Certainly not. It was another devil’s lie.

This is the fifth occasion where “OUT OF THE EARTH” or its equivalent appears in the Bible. King Saul of Israel, rejected by God, visited the witch of Endor, a woman in contact with evil spirits. She told Saul, “I saw gods ascending out of the earth”. (1 Samuel 28:13)

The only mention of any spirit beings ascending out of the earth is when a **witch of Satan** says so.

On this occasion, one of Satan’s fallen angels deceptively impersonates the dead prophet Samuel.

In Scripture, the only occasion that the expression “OUT OF THE EARTH” is linked to Satan’s band is when these devils themselves want to reinforce the pagan belief that their abode is under the physical earth. This false teaching is not found in Scripture EXCEPT here, where it is

revealed as emanating from Satan himself. The witch quoted the devil's lie.

Remember, Satan and his agents are liars. "... there is no truth in him" (Satan). He "is a liar, and the father of it." (John 8:44). His purpose is to deceive us.

But the Bible nowhere supports this pagan teaching. "God... cannot lie." (Titus 1:2) Not one Bible text says Satan comes up "out of the earth".

(d) How does the Bible contrast "earth" against "sea"?

Here is a rule to help us.

A **literal** event determines that the word "*earth*" will be understood **literally**. As when Satan (already identified and named) is cast down to the earth. (Rev.12:9) That event is not symbolic, but a real, literal event, exactly as described. So earth can be understood as a literal earth.

But when we see a **symbolic** action, such as the earth opening its "*mouth*", or a "*beast*" rising out of the "*earth*", we see a hint that the "*earth*" itself is **symbolic**.

And here's another discovery that can help us.

Careful reading shows that Revelation chapters 12 and 13 are the same continuous prophecy. (There were no chapter breaks in the original.)

Also, this prophecy employs **figures of speech** and **symbols**. For example, it is stated that "the earth opened her mouth". (Rev.12:16) This is obviously meant to be understood symbolically.

Always be prayerfully aware of the sense of the passage. How to understand a passage will also be determined by the context.

The **meaning** of "THE EARTH" symbolism in chapter 12 gives us the **meaning** of "THE EARTH" symbolism in chapter 13. Compare these two:

* "THE EARTH" in ch.12:16 – "And **the earth helped the woman,**

and THE EARTH opened her MOUTH” – that is, the earth provided escape for God’s people from the flood of persecution.

* “THE EARTH” in ch.13:11 – the second **BEAST “coming up out of THE EARTH”**.

In both of these texts the action is symbolic. “THE EARTH” in both cases has *the same symbolic meaning*.

So be prepared to discover a connection between Rev.12:16 where the *earth* helps the woman, and Rev.13:11 where a gentle beast rises peacefully out of the *earth*. There is a link between these two mentions of “*earth*”. And we should not miss it. The first helps explain the second.

1. EARTH IS OPPOSITE FROM SEA

Again, in Revelation 13, compare the risings of the two beasts. When one symbolic beast rises out of the sea (v. 1) but the other symbolic beast rises out of the earth (v.11), **are we seeing symbolism in action?** Indeed we are. Once again, consistency demands that just as the *beasts* are symbolic so the “*earth*” from which the beasts rise is likewise symbolic, in contrast to the symbolic “*sea*”.

Comparing the emergence of these two beasts, we notice that:

(a) The first beast rises “OUT OF THE SEA” (v. 1) - which chapter 17:15 explains as “nations, and kindreds, and tongues, and peoples” – meaning that the first beast rises among the crowded and struggling nationalities of the Old World - that turbulent sea of “peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.”

(b) In obvious contrast, the second beast rises not out of the sea of nations, but “OUT OF THE EARTH” (v.11) - hinting that it rises up somewhere away from that heavily populated sea of nations.

This is a legitimate method of Bible interpretation.

2. EARTH IS A WILDERNESS REGION

The second clue is this: We see “THE EARTH” used in chapter 12 to indicate a sparsely populated, wilderness region.

Notice carefully: The woman flees INTO THE WILDERNESS (v.6). Then the dragon sends a flood after the woman IN THE WILDERNESS (vv.14,15). But this same WILDERNESS (THE EARTH) “helped the woman” (v.16). THE EARTH swallowed up that flood so that the woman survived.

1. The woman flees into the *wilderness*.
2. The dragon sends a flood into the *wilderness*.
3. But the flood is swallowed up by the *earth* (that is, the wilderness)

In this prophecy, the WILDERNESS and the EARTH are the same place!

Now, just so that we understand the symbols used here, a woman in symbolic prophecy means a church.

- In Revelation 12 you have a pure woman, “a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars.” (Rev.12:1) God’s people - His church.
- “I have likened the daughter of Zion to a comely and beautiful woman.” (Jer.6:2) And what is this Zion that is likened to a woman? “...say unto Zion, Thou art my people.” (Isa.51:16)
- God’s people (His church) is symbolised by a woman. “Thy Maker is thy husband...The Lord hath called thee as a woman... and a wife.” (Isa.54:5,6)
- “For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.” (2 Cor.11:2)
- In Revelation 17 is an impure woman, a false religion, that rides the beast. (Rev.17:1-5)

Now, just think about this. Could this place which “helped the woman” (God’s people) really be Satan’s underworld abode?

Not at all. The Bible says that *Satan’s domain* (symbolically) is not the dry earth (the wilderness), but the *watery deep*. (See Isa.27:1 and page 70.)

In this prophecy of Revelation chapters 12 to 13, *the earth is a beneficent wilderness region, friendly to God’s people. It is not Satan’s abode.*

(Ultimately, in Revelation chapter 17, the harlot woman intrudes into that wilderness, but that is a later development in the series of events.)

In prophetic symbolism:

(a) the EARTH is a refuge to God's people.

(b) the SEA is the source of the wild beasts of Daniel 7 and Revelation 13 – and the symbolic abode of Satan.

The EARTH and the SEA are *contrasted as exact opposites*.

(e) Are “out of the sea” and “out of the earth” the same?

OBJECTION: Is it not wrong to make a distinction between “out of the earth” and “out of the sea”, as though they were something different - because in Daniel 7 four beasts rising “OUT OF THE SEA” (verse 3) are also said to rise “OUT OF THE EARTH” (v.17). Doesn't this indicate that these terms mean the same?

IN REALITY: Well? At first glance, this does appear to be a valid point. So let's see.

But... Oh! Again we have a problem. Actually, two problems. If we try to equate the English “OUT OF THE EARTH” of this verse in Daniel with the English “OUT OF THE EARTH” in Revelation 13, it just won't work.

Why not?

Unfortunately, these two passages are incompatible on two counts:

* Firstly, Dan.7:17 is a *literal explanation* of a symbol, while Rev.13:11 is a *symbol* itself. That makes them very different.

* Secondly, in Dan.7:17, kingdoms rise up **ON** the earth. But in Rev.13:11, a beast comes up **OUT OF** the earth.

1. SYMBOLS AND EXPLANATIONS: DON'T CONFUSE THEM

On the first point, you will notice that **Daniel 7** comprises two sections.

Section 1 - The **symbolic prophecy** (verses 2 to 12). This is given in symbolic language, such as “four great beasts came up from the sea.” (v.3)

Section 2 - The **literal explanation** (verses 17 to 25). “These ...are four kings [kingdoms – v.23] which shall arise out of the earth.” (v.17) You will notice that “out of the earth” (v.17) is not part of the symbolism. It is the explanation.

We must be careful to **avoid** falling into faulty reasoning by **confusing** the **symbols with the interpretation**.

Careful reading shows that in **Revelation 13** the situation is different. **The whole chapter is symbolism**. Just as in the first section of Daniel 7 four beasts rise “out of the sea” (that is the symbol), so also in Revelation 13 the ten-horned beast rises “out of the sea”. Again, that is symbolism. Then the two-horned beast of Revelation 13 rises “out of the earth” (v.11). Unlike the second section of Daniel 7, which explains the symbol, this passage in Revelation 13, by contrast, continues as pure symbolism. “Out of the earth” is part of that symbolism.

To put it another way, whereas Daniel’s “OUT OF THE EARTH” is **literal explanation** of an earlier symbol, in Revelation “OUT OF THE EARTH” is **NOT the explanation, but remains the symbol**. Therefore the analogy with Daniel does not stack up.

In Daniel 7, whereas ALL four beasts come up out of the sea, in Revelation 13 it is ONLY the first beast that rises out of the sea, BUT the second rises out of the earth. The symbolism continues, with a change. The **change of symbol** is significant. A deliberate change of venue. It is not loosely chosen. It relates to WHERE the beast arose.

In Revelation 13, **two locations are contrasted** in the same chapter – one beast rises out of the SEA, the other out of the EARTH, or land. Both locations are symbols.

If symbols have a purpose, and **if sea is contrasted with land, then the difference of locality needs to be noted...** If we allow Scripture to interpret itself, this means that the first beast arises in a heavily **populated area** where nations are gathered together (Rev.17:15), and the second beast arises where this feature is absent – in other words, in a more **sparse region** away from those nations.

Every word of holy Scripture is there for a purpose. **Every word** is important to a correct interpretation.

And here **SEA** and **EARTH** are especially contrasted, and with good reason.

It will help us, to understand a biblical principle. **The first occurrence of a word in the Bible bears some significance.**

“These are always important. The ancient Jewish commentators call special attention to them and lay great stress upon them, as always having some significance. They generally help us in fixing the meaning of a word or point to some lesson in connection with it.” (Bullinger, *Number in Scripture*, p.60)

So where is the first mention of both EARTH and SEA in the Bible? It is in Genesis chapter 1. “And God called the dry land EARTH, and the gathering together of the waters called he SEAS.” (Genesis 1:10) Now, this passage is the first reference to SEAS and EARTH. They are **contrasted** one as opposite from the other.

Let’s return, then, to the prophecy of Revelation 12 to 13 – remembering that these two chapters are of the same continuous prophecy. You will notice that again the EARTH and SEA are **contrasted** – just as in Genesis: “Woe to the inhabitants of the EARTH *and* of the SEA! for the devil is come down unto you.” (Rev.12:12) They are shown to be not the same.

Then, as the prophecy continues, we again observe SEA (13:1) **contrasted with** EARTH (13:11).

Does not this suggest that the second beast will arise in a contrasted location?

There is not one text suggesting that the **second beast** comes up from a bottomless pit, from the sea, or from any abode of the devil. Rather, it comes up in a place CONTRASTED with the sea – away from peoples, multitudes and nations - a place that is further defined in chapter 12 as a beneficent wilderness region.

The intention to make a CONTRAST OF OPPOSITES is indicated by two factors in particular in this prophecy. The **two following details taken together** do indicate that the power represented by the second

beast is **UNLIKE** those brought to view under **the preceding symbols**.

(a) THE EARTH, RATHER THAN SEA, SYMBOL: Previous ruling powers obtained their dominion **by conquest and revolution**, and they were presented to the prophet Daniel as beasts of prey, rising when the "four **winds** of the heaven **strove upon the great sea**." (Dan. 7:2) The winds represent **strife** and destruction. (Jer.25:31-33). Likewise the first beast of Revelation 13 comes out of this same turbulent sea.

But the second beast is seen "coming up out of the earth;" (Rev. 13:11) - instead of overthrowing other powers to establish itself, the ruling power thus represented **will arise in territory previously unoccupied**, and grow up gradually and **peacefully**. Very different!

(b) HORNS LIKE A LAMB SYMBOL: This idea of peaceful rising rather than warring conquest is reinforced by the "horns like those of a lamb" – suggesting youthful innocence. Again, very different!

The **two above features**, taken together, present a peaceful difference from the other beasts.

2. "RISE UP ON" AND "COME UP OUT OF: THEY ARE NOT THE SAME"

Subtle shades of meaning which our English translation sometimes misses, are found sparkling like gems in the Hebrew and the Greek.

The oldest and most important translation of the Hebrew Old Testament is the Septuagint (LXX). It translated the Hebrew into Greek in the third century BC. This was the Greek Bible **used by the apostles** instead of the Hebrew. Notice what it says:

ταυτα τα θηρια τα μεγαλα εισι τεσσαρες βασιλειαι αι απολουνται **απο** [apo] της γης (Dan.7:17)

Translated direct into English, this verse, Dan.7:17 says: "These four beasts are **four kingdoms** that shall **RISE UP ON** the earth." (*The Translation of the Greek Old Testament Scriptures*, Sir Lancelot C. L. Brenton 1851)

You'll see that "**apo**" is used. Its primary meaning is **not** "OUT OF" the earth, at all. But its primary meaning is "OFF," i.e. away (from something near).

This verse 17 is explaining the symbol of verse 3 (“Four great beasts came up from the sea.”): It says, “These four beasts are four kingdoms that shall **RISE UP ON [apo]** the earth.” Just as a dictator can RISE UP ON the earth (not coming up out of the earth), just as a construction project RISES UP ON the earth, so, says Daniel, “are four kingdoms that shall RISE UP ON the earth.” That is not symbolism. It is literal fulfilment.

SO the attempt to equate the English “OUT OF THE EARTH” of this verse in Daniel with the English “OUT OF THE EARTH” in Revelation 13, just won’t stand up.

Notice these two passages again:

In Dan.7:17 “**UP ON THE EARTH**” is “**apo**”. Once again, here is the passage in Greek:

ταυτα τα θηρια τα μεγαλα εισι τεσσαρες βασιλειαι αι απολουνται **απο** της γης

Rev.13:11 “**OUT OF THE EARTH**” is “**ek**”. Here is the passage in Greek:

και ειδον αλλο θηριον αναβαινον **εκ** της γης και ειχεν κερατα δυο ομοια αρνιω και ελαλει ως δρακων

“**apo**” versus “**ek**” Do you see that difference?

*Come up **OUT OF** the ground (**ek**) is **NOT** the same as rise up **ON** the ground (**apo**).*

A builder on a construction project who misses such a difference would be fired. He cannot shrug it off by saying, “The architect’s plans show this *extending up out of the ground*’, but I’ll just set it on top of the ground.”

Trying to make the two mean the same just won’t work.

Yes, “**UP ON** the earth” in Daniel is very different from “coming **OUT OF** the earth” in Revelation. Unfortunately, you can’t mix them to help the “Satan-out-of-the-earth” theory. A pity, yeah... but there’s no room for any misunderstanding here.

Is Satan “in” the earth now?

QUESTION: You say that Satan won't rise from the earth. If not, where is he now?

ANSWER: Please be careful not to confuse symbols with reality. **If you are speaking symbolically**, Satan is in “*the abyss*” - the “watery deep”, the “sea”, the “bottomless pit”. (Psa.74:13-15; Isa.27:1) His symbolic domain is the sea.

Therefore, the entity that rises symbolically “out of the earth” (i.e. the second beast of Rev. 13) is something else. That is not Satan.

Now let's speak physically. Satan does not have to rise from anywhere. He is already here – and he has been here ever since he overcame Adam, by which he took Adam's place as “the prince of this world” Since that time, Satan has always enjoyed free access throughout this planet - even to this day (“going to and fro in the earth, and... walking up and down in it.” - Job 1:7. “...as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour.” - 1 Pet.5:8). In fact, he is “the prince of the power of the air” (Eph.2:2)

Yes, in **physical reality**, Satan is on this earth **with us!** (Rev.12:12)

The confusion arises when you try to mix symbols with literal, physical reality. Symbols and literal language are **not** interchangeable. You have to understand the difference. Keep them separate. Don't confuse one with the other.

Revelation 13 is a symbolic prophecy. The beasts are symbols. The horns are symbols. The heads are symbols. The sea is a symbol. Coming “out of the earth” is a symbol.

2. THE “BEAST”: AN IMPERSONAL RULING POWER

(“I saw another **beast** coming up out of the earth” – Rev.13:11)

θηρίον

Different words translated “beast”

* There are two Greek words in Revelation translated into English as “beast”. The question to be faced is this: **Why are two different words chosen?**

1. “zoon” (*Strong 2226*), means **“a living creature” - which is used of persons.** This word symbolizes four living beings serving at the throne of God (e.g. in Rev. chs. 4 to 7) who have been redeemed from the earth. (See Rev.5:8,9)

2. “therion” (*Strong 2542*), means **“a dangerous animal, venomous wild beast” - which in prophecy is not applied to persons.** This is an impersonal word used for both the sea beast of Rev. chs.13 to 20 and the earth beast of Rev. ch.13.

Apart from the earth beast references, there are 44 places in the books of Daniel and Revelation where “*therion*” (in the Greek Bible) is translated “*beast*” in our English King James Bible – and *every* single instance is speaking of a corporate ruling power. Then, for *the Rev.13 earth beast*, *Inspiration has given us the very same word “therion”, with the same meaning.*

If the second beast was intended to denote a person (for example, Satan), the word “*zoon*” would have been used, and not the word “*therion*”. Never in Bible prophecy does “*therion*” ever signify an angel or any person. Its choice here instead of “*zoon*” indicates that a person is not intended. **This disqualifies Satan from being a valid interpretation.**

To repeat, in Bible prophecy this word “*therion*” is NEVER applied to a PERSON – but ALWAYS to an IMPERSONAL RULING POWER.

In Revelation, when “*therion*” (“*beast*”) is used – and in Daniel, wherever its Chaldean equivalents “*chay*” or “*cheyva*” (“*beast*”, “*beasts*”) are used, “*king*”, i.e., “*kingdom*” (a ruling power, political or religious, or a combination of both), is always indicated. (Daniel 7:17,23)

There is no other Bible definition but this.

A beast can mean a person?

OBJECTION: You say that a beast always represents a nation, never a person. But in Dan. 7:17 it says the four beasts are four **kings** that shall arise,” **not kingdoms**. So it **can** mean a person. So a beast in Revelation can mean a person – Satan.

IN REALITY: Hmmm. So we’re back to that original idea about the beast being a single person. It is easier to claim this twice than to prove it once. So let’s spell this out again. A beast in symbolic prophecy *always* represents **a ruling power, system, institution**.

On this, shall we let the book of Daniel speak to us?

THE “KING” IN DANIEL 2

The Daniel 2 prophecy describes a statue with

1. a head of gold
2. chest and arms of silver
3. belly and thighs of brass
4. legs of iron
5. feet of iron and clay.

These represent four kingdoms. The first kingdom is divinely interpreted in Daniel 2, as Babylon.

“God hath given thee a kingdom,” Daniel told Nebuchadnezzar. “Thou art the head of gold. And *after thee* shall arise *another kingdom* inferior to thee [Medo-Persia] and another *third kingdom* of brass, which shall bear rule over all the earth. And the *fourth kingdom* shall be strong as iron.” (Dan.2: 37-40)

So what was the head of gold?

Was it the individual *man* Nebuchadnezzar – *or the kingdom* of Babylon? Let’s see.

“*After thee*” cannot mean “after Nebuchadnezzar” the person, because “another kingdom” did *not* arise after Nebuchadnezzar. Babylon still continued, being ruled by other kings - Nabonidus, then Belshazzar. It

was only after Belshazzar (the last king of the Babylonian Empire) that “another kingdom” arose – Medo-Persia.

The “head of gold”? The man Nebuchadnezzar was not the topic – but Babylon the kingdom was. You see, the prophecy is *about the kingdom*, not a particular man.

From the time of the early Christian apostles, Bible students have recognised the four kingdoms of this prophecy to be the successive empires of Babylon (606 BC – 538 BC), Medo-Persia (538 BC – 331 BC), Grecia (331 BC – 168 BC) and Rome (168 BC – 476 AD).

“KING” IN DANIEL 8

Now let’s look at Daniel chapter 8. The Second and Third Kingdoms are directly interpreted by the angel Gabriel as Medo-Persia and Grecia.

“The ram which thou sawest having two horns are the *kings* of Media and Persia. And the rough goat is the *king* of Grecia.” (Dan.8:20)

“There you are,” says the objector – “kings – individual persons.” Ah, ha...

Very well, why don’t we just let the Bible interpret itself?

At first, Daniel says: “I saw the ram pushing westward, and northward, and southward; so that no beasts might stand before him, *neither was there any that could deliver out of his hand*; but he did according to his will, and became great.” (Dan.8:4) This accurately describes the expansion of the *unstoppable* Medo-Persian empire around 538 BC. Nothing could withstand that “ram”.

Then Daniel writes: “And I saw [the goat] come close unto the ram, and he was moved with choler against him, and smote the ram, and brake his two horns; and there was *no power in the ram* to stand before him.” (v.7) This describes the collapse of the Medo-Persian Empire. Unable to withstand the Greek invasion (the attacking “goat”) in 331 BC, the ram was defeated.

First the ram is unstoppable. Then it has no power. But note this: between those two conditions is a time span of 207 years.

Obviously, with those two events 207 years apart, the ram cannot by any stretch of the imagination denote an individual king, but rather refers to the entire duration of the Medo-Persian Empire, spread out over 207 years. It denotes an empire with its long dynasty of kings. The “kings of Media and Persia” denotes the same single empire (a coalition of two kingdoms, the Medes and the Persians) stretched out over 207 years.

A single king? This cannot be the right answer, nor anywhere near it.

Now let’s read this again: “The ram which thou sawest having two horns are the *kings* of Media and Persia. And the rough goat is the *king* of Grecia: and the great horn that is between his eyes is the *first king*. Now that being broken, whereas four stood up for it, four *kingdoms* shall stand up out of the *nation*.” (Dan.8:20-22)

Notice that when Gabriel calls the goat a “**king**”, he then explains that this does *not* mean an **individual person**, *but* a **whole “nation”** (v.22). Notice: “...four kingdoms shall stand up out of the *nation*.”

This nation is Grecia. (v.21) And he differentiates between “the **first king**” of that “**nation**” (a man) and four **kingdoms** that will emerge **out of that same nation**. The goat is *not a man but a nation* (v.22) – the empire of Grecia.

The same is true of all the “beast” powers – in Daniel 7 and 8 and Revelation 13. Each one is an empire – not an individual person.

Experienced Bible scholars do not quibble over the meaning of “king”. It is easy to see from the above that “the first king” cannot be “the first king” of the goat “king”. You can’t have *a first king of a king*. That would not make sense. But you can have *a “first king” of a kingdom*.

The “first king” of the goat is worded in quite a different way. In this single instance a person is specifically mentioned who is to be the first king of that nation. But the “goat” is a “nation” (v.22) – not a person.

The generic term “king” refers to **a line or office of kings**.

The rule is that **individual kings are not the topics** of these empire prophecies of Daniel 2, 7 and 8. In every case it is the kingdom (the long-living empire) that fulfils the prophecy.

This cold, hard fact makes nonsense of the claim that because these beasts are termed “kings”, then the second beast of Revelation 13 can be an individual person – Satan.

“**KING**” IN DANIEL 7

“These great beasts, which are four, are **four kings** that shall arise.”
(Dan.7:17)

In the Hebrew language:

- * *melekh* = “king”
- * *melakhim* = “kings”
- * *malkhyn* = “kingdoms” in Dan.7:17 (written thus: מלכין)

Notice carefully what Daniel 7:17 says in the Hebrew Bible:

17 אליו חיותא רברבתא די אנין ארבע ארבעה מלכין יקומון מן-ארעא:

You notice that in the Hebrew Bible, the word *malkhyn* (“**kingdoms**”) is used.

Literally, this verse says, in English: “These great beasts, which are four, are **four kingdoms** that shall arise.” (Dan7:17)

There it is in the original Hebrew. And it’s also in the Greek.

The oldest and most important translation of the Hebrew Old Testament is the Septuagint (LXX). It translated the Hebrew into Greek in the third century BC. This was the Greek Bible used by the apostles instead of the Hebrew. Notice what it says:

ταυτα τα θηρια τα μεγαλα εισι τεσσαρες βασιλεια [kingdoms] αι
απολουνται απο της γης

Translated direct into English, this says: “These four beasts are **four kingdoms** that shall rise up on the earth.” (*The Translation of the Greek Old Testament Scriptures*, Sir Lancelot C. L. Brenton 1851)

So there you have Daniel 7:17 in **both Hebrew and Greek**, saying not *kings*, but **KINGDOMS**. This makes nonsense of the “individual man – king” theory. To an honest person who wants only the truth, that should settle it.

But common sense will tell us the same thing. **The pattern** established is of empires – one empire after another.

It is not honest to quote Daniel 7:17 without quoting also verse 23, which explains it – “The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon the earth.” Here “king” (**line of kings**) is further explained as meaning “kingdom”.

The subject of the prophecy is not individual men, but kingdoms (ruling powers, empires). That should settle it.

To try to inject individual men into this prophecy perverts the truth. Always the word “king” denotes a **line of kings belonging to a longer-living empire** – nothing more. The focus is not on a man, but on the empire, the system.

As we have seen, the First Kingdom was previously interpreted in Daniel 2, as Babylon. The Second and Third Kingdoms are directly interpreted in Daniel 8 by the Angel Gabriel as Medo-Persia and Grecia. Secular history interprets the remaining kingdom. The Bible always indicates where to begin.

Did Bible students in New Testament times think these beasts were men – individual kings? Not at all. **They** understood that Daniel’s prophecies were verified by history, as:

1. Babylonian Empire
2. Medo-Persian Empire
3. Greek Empire
4. Roman Empire

It seems clear from Luke 21:20 that Luke understands the “abomination of desolation” in Daniel to be the Romans surrounding Jerusalem, and then capturing Jerusalem. This happened in 70 AD.

Daniel describes four successive beasts. And from the time of Daniel until our day, Jewish and Christian Bible students have known these four kingdoms to be four successive major empires - the empires of Babylon (606 BC – 538 BC), Medo-Persia (538 BC – 331 BC), Grecia (331 BC – 168 BC) and Rome (168 BC – 476 AD). **Not one of these beasts is an individual king.**

If these were not kingdoms, but merely four individual persons, then please tell me:

- (a) Who were these four persons? What are their names?
 (b) How long did each of those four individual persons live?

At the risk of being a pain, I shall say it again. The pattern is of empires.

Likewise for the beasts in Revelation 13. They continue the pattern established in Daniel.

The first beast of Revelation 13 (as with the fourth beast in Daniel 7) has ten horns, which links this beast to Rome. The symbolism continues. It is a pattern.

Here, again, is the pattern for all of them:

- In Dan.7 - The lion beast was an **empire**
- The bear beast was an **empire**
- The leopard beast was an **empire**
- The 10-horned beast was an **empire**
- In Dan.8 - The ram beast was an **empire**
- The goat beast was an **empire**
- In Rev.13 - The 10-horned beast was an **empire**
- And the 2-horned earth beast...?

No Bible justification for the “Satan” theory

What possibly could lead a man to reject a clear scriptural pattern? What is the **motive** that would drive a man to want individual kings to be the subject of these prophecies - instead of empires?

Simply this: that he so much wants an individual person – Satan – to become one of the beasts. He wants Satan personally to be the Revelation 13 2-horned beast (aka the second beast). He has such a vested interest in this, from having promoted it widely, that he is now forced to strain hard, looking for a precedent.

But no such Bible precedent exists!

Nowhere does the Bible suggest that its prophetic beasts are individual persons – but always kingdoms, empires, systems. And there is not a hint that the second beast of Revelation 13 might be Satan.

Satan's kingdom is always the whole planet

He is consistently the devil, the dragon, the serpent, the prince of this world.

This whole planet has been Satan's kingdom since our first parents fell – and has continued all through the reigns of Egypt, Assyria, Babylon, Medo-Persia, Grecia, pagan Rome, and papal Rome today. The same spirit that ruled the Babylonian, Medo-Persian, Grecian and Roman empires, rules the first and second beasts of Revelation 13 today.

Yet none of these empires has been Satan personally. They were separate corporate entities. Although he worked through them all, yet none of them was Satan himself, the individual.

The point is that, like its predecessors, the second beast of Revelation 13 is another corporate entity.

To turn it into an individual person – such as Satan himself – violates the established rhythm of the prophecies.

Summary:

Firstly, John's choice of the Greek word "*therion*" (dangerous animal, venomous wild beast) instead of "*zoon*" (a living being) settles the matter. If John had meant this "beast" to be a person, he would have used the word "*zoon*". I'll go with John and the Bible.

In symbolic prophecy "*therion*" never means a person. And the use of "*therion*" is right there in Rev. 13:11. You can't change that. The Lord Himself gave that to John. He chose the word "*therion*".

When you have to choose between what you think and what the Bible is saying, you have to choose what the Bible says – and in Revelation 13 it says "*therion*".

To anyone who reads with care, it becomes evident that the symbolic prophecies of Daniel 2, 7 and 8 are not about individual kings, but about empires (civil and/or religious). Revelation 13 continues this pattern.

Indeed, this God-given pattern is impossible to break.

Let's say it again. There is **absolutely NO Scriptural license to make any prophetic beast (*therion*) an individual person**. None at all.

Does a beast ALWAYS represent a ruling power or system?

OBJECTION: How can this be? If a beast is always a political and/or religious system, then the Lamb in Revelation chapters 21 and 22, would also be a system. But that's ridiculous – because the Lamb refers to a person (Jesus). So surely the second beast of Revelation might also represent a person (Satan)?

IN REALITY: It is a mistake to confuse “lamb” with “beast”, since they are **two different words** carefully chosen by Inspiration for their quite different meanings.

It is true that the Bible sometimes employs metaphors to describe either Jesus or Satan. We can better understand certain characteristics of our Saviour and of the enemy when we see either of them likened to a creature noted for those characteristics. We think of the lion's fierceness, the lamb's meekness and sacrifice, the eagle's protectiveness of its young, the ox's strength, the dragon's destructiveness.

Such metaphors enrich our understanding of specific character roles that they play.

NO NEED TO CHANGE SATAN'S SYMBOL

We know who the Lamb is – Jesus. We already know who the dragon is – Satan. These are each highly descriptive terms. To describe Jesus or Satan, there is neither a need, nor a Scriptural precedent, for using the vague term “*beast*”, which has no specific role identification. There is no need for Satan to be made symbolic further.

To repeat: When Satan is intended, he is called “Satan” or “dragon” outright. There is **no need** to suddenly call him a “*beast*”, which is a **term that needs to be interpreted**. Why use a symbol that needs interpretation, when he already has a symbol that needs no interpretation?

Summary:

According the rules of biblical language, the second beast of Revelation 13 is not a person, but an IMPERSONAL EARTHLY POWER.

3. THE TERM “ANOTHER”

(“I saw **another** beast” – Rev.13:11)

ἄλλο

IN WHAT FORM does this second beast come up? The Greek language is much more precise than the English.

(a) The choice of word for “another” is important

Where the English language has only one word for “*another*”, in the Greek language contrasting word choices are often used to convey subtle differences of meaning. These differences are significant.

There are several Greek words in the Bible translated as “another”.

1. “*allos*” means “another of the same kind”.
2. “*heteros*” means “another of a different kind”.

(b) Could “allos” apply to Satan?

It may be asked, Couldn’t “*allos*” also apply to Satan? After all, Satan is of the same kind of character as the first beast. So he fits the requirement of the word “*allos*” (“*another of the same kind*”).

YES, “ALLOS” COULD APPLY TO SATAN – IN ONE DETAIL:

If both the first beast and Satan are evil, then they are indeed of the same kind – in character. It’s absolutely true that in that one detail Satan matches the “*allos*” requirement (another of the same kind).

HERE ONE DETAIL MATCHES

- (a) The first beast is evil.
- (a) Satan is evil – another of the same kind.

However, why go for an option that “only just” fits, when there’s a better one?

HERE TWO DETAILS MATCH

- (a) The first beast is evil
- (a) The second beast is evil. But not only evil.
- (b) The first beast is a ruling corporate power (political and religious)
- (b) The second beast is a ruling corporate power (political and religious)

Isn’t it a **better fitting fulfilment** when both details match? Does not an evil, ruling corporate power, matching both details of comparison with the first beast fulfil the term “*allos*” much better?

Here are some examples of these two different words in use.

While “*allos*” may speak of character, it most appropriately describes **form**. We catch a clue from the choice of words concerning Jesus after His resurrection.

Mark, in describing Jesus appearing after his resurrection **in “ANOTHER” form** (Mark 16:12), selects the Greek word “*heteros*”, which means “*different*”, “altered”, “else”. (*Strong’s Concordance* 2087)

Even though Jesus was of the **same character**, yet the **form** of His appearance was **different**. “After that he appeared in ANOTHER [*“heteros”*] **form** unto two of them.” (Mark 16:12)

By contrast, in Revelation 13 we see **the other word (“*allos*”)** used. When the second beast follows the first beast, it is NOT “*heteros*” - in a form different from the first beast (such as a person would be), but is in the SAME form as the first beast. This tells us without confusion that just

as the first beast is a ruling power or institution, so likewise is the second beast a ruling power or institution. Hence it is described as “*allos*” - “ANOTHER *of the same kind*” (Strong 248)

Since the first beast is not a person, but a power, a system, then “*allos*” (another of the same kind) suggests that the second beast is likewise not a person but rather a power, a system. The Bible says it is “*allos*”, another of the same kind.

There is a distinct difference of form between an individual person and a corporate institution. They are NOT of the same kind. So if the second beast was an individual person, in contrast to the first beast, as a corporate institution, we might reasonably expect “*heteros*” to be used – instead of “*allos*” .

If, however, both beasts are corporate systems, “*allos*” (as used in Rev.13:11) is very appropriate.

Similarly, Jesus uses the word “*allos*” when he speaks of the Holy Spirit as “*another Comforter*” who shall come to replace Him (John 14:16) – that is, “*another of the same kind*” - a person, like Himself.

Summary

While Satan is of the same evil character as the first beast, it is poor reasoning to call him “another of the same kind” (“*allos*”). Only an evil, impersonal ruling power, exactly as the first, matches this “*allos*” requirement perfectly.

4. WILL BE “COMING UP” LIKE A PLANT

(“I saw another beast **coming up** out of the earth.” – Rev.13:11)

ἀναβαῖνον

Just as important as WHERE it comes up, is **HOW**.

The Greek word chosen here for “coming up” is “*anabainon*”. What does this mean?

In Matthew 13:7 it is used of plants growing up. When “*anabainon*” (“coming up”) is combined with “the earth” (as in “coming up out of the earth”) it conveys the meaning of “growing up out of the earth like a seed.”

The second beast will grow up silently and peacefully. It is gentle in its manner of rising, like a plant gently emerging from the earth.

This is in contrast to all of the other beasts in Daniel and Revelation, which charge up out of the turbulent, troubled sea.

5. HAS “TWO HORNS” (POWERS)

(“He had **two horns**.” – Rev.13:11)

κέρατα δύο

Horns indicate power, authority. (Hab.3:4 ; Zech.1:21)

The verses that follow this passage indicate that the second beast exercises authority in two realms:

1. state (political and economic – vv.12,16,17), and
2. religious (v.15).

Two separate horns indicates the separateness of these two powers initially. Since the lamb’s horns also suggest youthful innocence, such would be consistent with civil and religious gentleness and freedom (separation of church and state).

6. THESE HORNS OF POWER ARE YOUNG AND INNOCENT

(“He had two horns **like a lamb**.” – Rev.13:11)

ὅμοια ἀρνίῳ

**Not the beast, but the horns,
are lamb-like**

To call the beast “lamb-like” is incorrect. Nowhere is the beast itself said

to be “like a lamb”. It is the **horns** that are lamblike. The initial focus is on the two horns like those of a young lamb.

To be certain of this, let’s read every word carefully again: “He had two horns like a lamb.” In plain English, the thought is of “*two little horns like those of a lamb*”. The horns of a lamb have hardly begun to grow. The lamb-like feature applies to the horns, not to the beast. The lamb-likeness of the horns **indicates youthfulness**.

No definite article (it is NOT like “the” Lamb)

The wording of the Bible is very thoughtfully constructed. With the Holy Spirit in control, the definite article “the” was purposely omitted here. The intended meaning was NOT “like THE Lamb”, but “horns like “A” lamb – indicating youthfulness.

OBJECTION: The ‘a’ in verse 11 has been added by man. It simply says ‘two horns like lamb’. It is referring to the definite article, and should more accurately be translated as ‘two horns like *the* lamb’. So, who is ‘the lamb’? Jesus. And this beast appears like Jesus, but will eventually speak as ‘the dragon’; Satan. His two horns represent the political and religious authorities through which he will rule. Like ‘the lamb’, Satan will temporarily have ‘all power’, over church and state.

IN REALITY: The “a” in our English Bible is NOT a mistake. The “a” in English is correctly inserted to convey the true meaning of the Greek original.

This is because the Greek and English languages have differences in grammar. In English when there is NO definite article we would say “like A lamb” But in Greek, they simply say “like lamb” - because there is no separate word for “A”. So in English you have to supply “A” in order to make it read right. (It would not be good English to say “like lamb”).)

On the other hand, when a definite article is intended, the Greek does have a word for “THE”. When Jesus “THE” Lamb is being spoken of (for example in Rev.13:8), the Greek always has the definite article (just as in English). So when John writes about “*the Lamb*” (Jesus), he says “*to arnion*”; and when he says “*of the Lamb*” he says “*tou arnion*”. When he is speaking only of “*a lamb*” it is simply “*arnion*”. Examples:

Rev.13:8	Rev.6:1	Rev.13:11
τοῦ ἀρνίου	τὸ ἀρνίον	ἀρνίω, ὅμοια ἀρνίω
“of the Lamb”	“the Lamb”	“a lamb” “like a lamb”
		(no word for “a” in Greek)

But in our prophecy (Rev.13:11) there is NO definite article. It does NOT say “like THE Lamb” (Jesus).

To recap, in Revelation 13:11, if John (writing in Greek) had intended to say “like THE Lamb” (Jesus) he would have added the definite article. He would have said “*homoios o arnion*” (“*like the Lamb*”). But, under inspiration, he has deliberately omitted the definite article “*the*”, before “lamb”. He says, simply, “*homoios arnion*” (“*like lamb*”)

And our King James English translation reflects this accurately by adding the word “a”, to convey the same meaning in good English.

“THE Lamb” has 7 horns, not 2

In any case, when the Lamb Jesus Christ is symbolised, that Lamb has SEVEN horns, not two. (Rev.5:6) If He wanted us to understand that the second beast was impersonating the Lamb, wouldn’t it be described as having “**seven** horns like **the** Lamb”? But this is not the case.

Summary

The Revelation 13 prophecy does NOT say “like THE Lamb”. The expression “two horns like a lamb” means precisely that - “A” lamb.

No, the text does NOT say this beast in Revelation 13:11 is impersonating Jesus, THE Lamb. It says only that its two horns are like those of a young lamb – youthfully innocent. To add anything else is private (human) interpretation.

7. “AS A DRAGON”

“...and he spake **as a dragon**.”(Rev.13:11)

ὡς δράκων

This second beast, although growing up gently with the innocence of youth, will become dangerous like a dragon. “As innocent as a lamb, as dangerous as a dragon.”

If Satan were intended here, the Scripture would say so. It always does. When the dragon himself personally does the action, the Bible says so:

- “The dragon stood.” (Rev.12:4)
- “The dragon saw.” (Rev.12:13)
- “The dragon ...persecuted.” (Rev.12:13)
- “The dragon cast out of his mouth...” (Rev.12:16)
- “The dragon was wroth...” (Rev.12:17)

By contrast, the Bible tells us that this second beast will only speak “as [like] a dragon.” It does NOT say “THE dragon spake”. This is significant. It is telling us that the beast, in its behaviour, will resemble “A” dragon.

Here you have a figure of speech, a simile – which says it is “like a”. In this case, the second beast is NOT the dragon, but “like a” dragon.

Again, there is no definite article, which there would be if “THE dragon” (Satan) were intended. That is, the beast will speak dragon-like, just as its horns were lamb-like.

Once again, we need to believe that every word or omission of a word, in the Bible is important.

8. IS SUBORDINATE TO THE FIRST BEAST

“He exerciseth all the power of the first beast BEFORE HIM.” (Rev.13:12); “wrought miracles BEFORE HIM.” (Rev.19:20)

¹² καὶ τὴν ἐξουσίαν τοῦ πρώτου θηρίου πάσαν ποιεῖ ἐνώπιον αὐτοῦ.

“BEFORE HIM”

“He exerciseth all the power of the first beast BEFORE HIM.” (Rev.13:12); “wrought miracles BEFORE HIM.” (Rev.19:20)

“BEFORE” = the Greek word “*enopian*” which means: “*in the presence (sight) of*”. (Strong, 1799)

The Bible uses these terms “*before*” and “*in the sight of*” to describe a subordinate working for his superior in rank. (I have not found any exceptions.)

For example:

- * Genesis 18:22 – “Abraham stood yet **BEFORE the Lord.**”
- * Rev.11:4 – Regarding the two witnesses: “These are the two olive trees and the two lampstands that stand **BEFORE the Lord** of the earth.”

One who stands “*before*” someone else is ready to do that person's bidding. The earth beast will what the first beast bids.

“IN HIS SIGHT”

A similar expression is “IN THE SIGHT OF the [first] beast” (v.14). The second beast does these works on behalf of and IN THE PRESENCE OF the first beast. **The subordinate works** in THE SIGHT OF his superior, not the other way around.

In relation to one's work, the subordinate always serves in the sight of, or in the presence of his superior. Here are some examples:

- * Psalm 76:7 – “Who may stand **IN THY SIGHT** when once thou art angry?”
- * Acts 7:10 – God gave Joseph “favour and wisdom **IN THE SIGHT OF PHARAOH** king of Egypt; and he made him governor...”
- * 1 Sam.19:7 - Young David served in the “**PRESENCE**” of King Saul.
- * 2 Sam.16:19 – Hushai served in the “**PRESENCE**” of King Saul's son Absalom.
- * Esther 1:10 – Seven chamberlains served in the “**PRESENCE**” of Ahasuerus the king.

The expressions “IN THE SIGHT OF”, “IN THE PRESENCE OF”, “BEFORE” tell us that Abraham (a subordinate) was working for God (his superior in rank). Joseph was working “IN THE SIGHT OF”, “IN THE PRESENCE OF”, “BEFORE” Pharaoh. And so on.

The expression “in his sight” means that **the second beast is subordinate to and under the direction of the first beast**. This second beast is out in front but its authority is very closely controlled. He is only granted his power “in his presence,” “in the sight of the beast” (Rev. 13:14. Compare Rev. 19:20 – “before him”). He is on a leash, as it were.

The second beast is **strictly subordinate** to the first beast. Its aim is solely to make sure that the earth's inhabitants worship the first beast (vv. 14-15). That is its key role.

Whereas we are told in Rev.13:2 that the first beast uses the dragon's power that is given to it, so are we told in Rev.13:12 that the second beast uses (executes) the first beast's power. “He exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him [literally, ‘in his presence’, under his inspection].”

This indicates that the second beast is executing the will of the first beast. It is subordinate to the first beast.

As you can see, this disqualifies Satan from being the second beast. Because **Satan is subordinate to no human system**.

Summary

The second beast is strictly subordinate to the first beast. Its mission is not to exalt itself or to demand worship for itself, but solely to make sure that the earth's inhabitants worship the first beast (vv. 14-15).

9. WORSHIP GOES TO THE FIRST BEAST, NOT TO THE SECOND BEAST

This second beast does **not promote itself**, but another.

καὶ ποιεῖ τὴν γῆν καὶ τοὺς ἐν αὐτῇ κατοικοῦντας
ἵνα προσκυνήσουσιν τὸ θηρίον τὸ πρῶτον,

“He causeth [everyone] to worship the first beast.” (Rev.13:12).

This second beast does not demand worship of itself, but is the promoter and agent of the first beast – the beast from the sea. (Rev.13:12) He is the FIRST beast’s cheerleader: “Worship the first beast... Worship the first beast... Worship the first beast!”

It sets out to “make an image to the beast” (v.14) - The purpose of the image is to honour the first beast.

“All shall worship him.” (the FIRST beast) (v.8)

There is nothing in Rev. 13, nor elsewhere, to show that this second beast is worshipped, but rather that he directs worship away from himself, to the first beast.

FORMS AN IMAGE TO THE FIRST BEAST

The focus is on forming an image **to the first beast**.

The first mention of the word “image” in the Bible is in Genesis 1:26 – “And God said, Let us make man in our **image**, after our **likeness**.” Here the word “image” is defined as “likeness”.

We have already noted a biblical principle that the first occurrence of a word in the Bible generally helps us in fixing the meaning of a word. When one makes an image “to” or “of” something, one becomes ***an exact likeness*** of that other one.

Jesus is described as the “express image” of God (Heb.1:3). He exhibited the exact character of the Father.

In forming an image to the first beast, the second beast (although a separate entity) becomes a perfect likeness to that first beast. Again, “image” = “likeness” (Gen.1:26).

That is, the second beast’s organization will function on much the same principles as the first beast’s organization.

10. IS GLOBALLY INFLUENTIAL

“He causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to...”;

“And he causeth all...” (Rev.13:12,16)

ποιεῖ

The second beast will be strong enough to enforce laws worldwide. It will be a **world policeman**. It will be globally influential.

11. IS AUTHORISED AND EMPOWERED BY THE FIRST BEAST

καὶ τὴν ἐξουσίαν τοῦ πρώτου θηρίου πᾶσαν ποιεῖ
ἐνώπιον αὐτοῦ.

“And he exercises all the authority belonging to the first beast, in his presence.” (Rev.13:12)

IT IS CLAIMED: The second beast (Satan) will perform deceptive miracles, by power it is granted from God. The second beast (Satan) will give his power to the first beast. (Rev.13:14)

IN REALITY: This is not the right reading of the text, nor anywhere near it. The Bible does **not** say the second beast is empowered by God. It says that the second beast is **empowered by the first beast**.

Descending rank

“*exerciseth*” (Greek: “*poiea*” = executes)

“*power*” (Greek: “*exousia*” = delegated influence, authority)

“*before*” (Greek: “*enopian*” = “in the presence (sight) of”).

So what is the literal meaning of this verse? “**And he executes all the delegated authority of the first beast, in his sight.**”

* Notice this **descending grade of rank**:

(a) **FROM DRAGON TO FIRST BEAST:** The DRAGON gives his power to the FIRST BEAST: “And the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.” (Rev.13:2)

(b) **FROM FIRST BEAST TO SECOND BEAST:** In turn, the second beast is empowered by the first beast: “And he exerciseth all the **power of the first beast.**” (v.12)

Whose power does that first beast exercise? ANSWER: The dragon’s power.

Whose power does the second beast exercise? ANSWER: The first beast’s power. “And he exerciseth all the **power of the first beast.**” (v.12)

So the FIRST BEAST gives ITS power to the SECOND BEAST. The first beast possesses certain power, which the second beast will exercise (use).

If you use solar power, whose power is being executed (used)? Silly question. It’s not your own. You are using **the sun’s power.**

Summary

“He exerciseth all the **power of the first beast.**” The second beast is empowered and authorized by the first beast. The power belongs to the first beast – and the second beast uses it. The first beast is in charge, and the second beast does its dirty work.

The *second* beast is dependent upon the first beast for his power. The second beast does the bidding of the first beast by receiving the delegation of authority. The second beast occupies a secondary role. The second beast’s role is to promote the first beast’s aims.

This second beast is the promoter and agent of the first beast (Rev.13:12). It is the FIRST beast’s cheerleader. It is ***the assistant beast*** and public relations entity. It is the proclaimer of the first beast and the enforcer of its worship.

According to verse 12, the second beast has been given the direction and management of all the power of the first beast. The second beast "does" (that is, exercises) *all the authority of the first beast on his behalf*, and "makes" *the earth and its inhabitants worship the first beast* (v.12),

telling them to "make" (or *set up*) an image in honour of the first beast (v.14).

Here it is, then:

DRAGON gives power >>> FIRST BEAST gives power >>> SECOND BEAST

It is not his (the second beast's) own power, but the first beast's power, that makes his work successful.

Do I need to state this? The Greek of Rev.13:12 **ALLOWS NO OTHER MEANING** than that the second beast **derives its power from the first beast**. End of case.

12. SIGNS AND WONDERS; FIRE FROM HEAVEN

“And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven in the sight of men. And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast.” (Rev.13:13,14)

Fire: literal or symbolic?

This “fire” – is it literal fire, or symbolic? The context must determine the answer:

- * Is the dragon literal or symbolic?
- * Is the beast literal or symbolic?
- * Are the horns literal or symbolic?
- * Is the image literal or symbolic?
- * Is the sea literal or symbolic?
- * Is the fire literal or symbolic?

To be consistent, those other details –dragon, beast, horns, and so on - point to the fire being another symbol.

In the book of Revelation, of what is fire symbolic? Answer: 7 lamps of FIRE represent the perfect Holy Spirit. (Rev.4:5)

Fire is associated with the Holy Spirit. “He shall baptise you with the **Holy Ghost** and with **fire**.” (Luke 3:16 ; Matt.3:11)

It is symbolic of the baptism of the Holy Spirit. Acts 2:2-4 - “...there came a sound **from heaven**... and ...cloven tongues like as of **fire**... And they were all filled with the **Holy Ghost**, and began to speak with other **tongues** [known languages – vv.6-8], as the **Spirit** gave them utterance.”

An act of worship

“Fire from heaven” is an act of worship.

This second beast will do great signs so that it makes fire come down from heaven into the earth

1. in the sight of (under the direction of) humans - not under the direction of God (v.13) – and
2. in the sight of (under the explicit direction of) the first beast (v.14).

The second beast (the false prophet) draws the world into a false worship movement - a false Pentecost - that counterfeits the fire of God.

Signs, miracles and wonders, such as tongues-babbling – the counterfeit “fire” of Pentecost – miraculous healings, and so on, are performed in order to deceive. People are deceived into thinking that this false “spiritual” manifestation is the genuine Holy Spirit of God. It’s all about worship – so that they make an image to the first beast. It’s all about worshipping (obeying) the beast.

At the genuine Pentecost of Acts 2, the Holy Spirit came with fire and the gift of tongues. In the counterfeit last days Pentecost, fire comes from heaven and with it the gift of tongues.

This counterfeit movement of “Babylon” is also described in chapter 18. It is under the control of evil spirits, “and has become “the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit...” (Rev.18:2)

This false Pentecostal fire unifies the false systems of worship. That’s a unity in which the dragon, beast and false prophet lead.

Rev.16:13,14 – “I saw... **spirits** like **frogs**, come out of the **mouth** of the dragon, and out of the **mouth** of the beast, and out of the **mouth** of the

false prophet... working **miracles**, which go forth unto... of the whole world, to gather them...”

Why frogs? How do frogs catch their prey? Answer: with their **tongues**. Frogs sit on leaves and when their prey comes, they shoot out their long tongues and catch their victims. A counterfeit “tongues” movement, accompanied by signs and wonders, will deceive the whole world into believing they have God’s blessing.

Summary

Fire from heaven, as in Rev.13, will be a prominent feature of a false spiritual revival, counterfeiting the work of the Holy Spirit, in which people will be deceived into thinking that God is with them in their formation of the image to the beast. (vv.13,14)

The identification points again

To discover the truth about the second beast of Rev.13, we must address ALL of these requirements. If we miss just one of them, we may come to the wrong conclusion.

1. It arises “out of the earth” – a sparsely populated, wilderness region.
2. The “beast” (“*therion*”) is an impersonal ruling power.
3. It is “another” ruling power of the same kind (“*allos*”) as the first.
4. It is “coming up” gently and peacefully (“*anabainon*”) like a plant.
5. It possesses two powers (“two horns”) which are separate from each other.
6. These two elements of power are young and innocent.
7. It ultimately speaks “as a dragon”.
8. It is subordinate to the first beast.
9. Worship goes to the first, not the second, beast
10. It is strong enough to “cause all” (force all) worldwide to obey.
11. It is authorised and empowered by the first beast.
12. It manifests signs and wonders; fire from heaven.

If you are not sure about these ID points, then please go over them again. They are critical to a biblical understanding of the prophecy.

You think you already know what this prophecy is about? Your sincerity is no guarantee. If you don’t add up **all** the figures correctly, you will not get the right answer.

5

IS THE SECOND BEAST SATAN?

The following points are offered to us suggesting that Satan will fulfil the requirements of the second beast:

1. The second beast will have power to cause ALL the world to conform to the papal beast (Rev 13:12).
2. It will call fire down from heaven in the sight of men (Rev 13:13).
3. It will be powerful enough to control the entire world of diverse religions, with little resistance (Rev 13:15).
4. The second beast will perform deceptive miracles, by power it is granted from God (Rev 13:14).
5. It will force all people to receive a mark of its name on the forehead or the number of its name on their hand (Rev 13:16)
6. It will appear in the form of a man (Rev 13:17,18 - "...or the number of **his** name....count the number of the [*lamb-like*] beast: for it is the number of **a man**.”)
7. All the earth shall worship it. (Rev.13:8)
8. It is cast into the lake of fire at the Second Coming (Rev 19:20).

Since these points appear quite reasonable, shall we address them now?

REASONS “**FOR**” SECOND BEAST TO BE SATAN

- 1. The 2nd beast will have power to cause ALL the world to conform to the first beast**

Could this apply to Satan? Yes.

2. It will call fire down from heaven

Could this apply to Satan? Yes.

3. It will be powerful enough to control all religions

Could this apply to Satan? Yes.

4. It will perform miracles, by power granted from God (Rev 13:14).

It is indeed true that Satan can perform miracles – and we know that all power ultimately originates with God.

But is God directly empowering the second beast?

We are not left to guess.

Fortunately, the prophecy DOES tell us **who is empowering and authorising** the second beast:

“And he exerciseth [uses, employs] all the **power of the first beast.**” (v.12) That is, the power that the second beast exercises belongs to the first beast. The second beast is empowered by the first beast. (See again Point 11 on pages 107 to 109.)

The prophecy says the second beast derives its power **not from God, but from the first beast.**

The first beast possesses certain power, which the second beast will use.

If this second beast was Satan, he would not need to employ the power of the first beast - since it was Satan who gave that first beast his satanic power anyway (Rev.13:2). So, Satan, who is superior to the first beast,

has no need to use the first beast's power. Rather, Satan will use his own superior power.

But we are told that **the second beast does derive his power from the first beast**. Therefore this second beast cannot be Satan.

5. It will force all people to receive a mark of its name on the forehead or the number of its name on their hand (Rev 13:16)

Could this apply to Satan? Yes.

However, for accuracy, this No. 5 statement needs a small correction. There is no Scriptural support for the notion of an outer tattoo “on” the forehead or “on” the hand.

This kind of interpretation may bring a tingle of anticipation, but it is neither faithful to the biblical text nor to its proper exegesis. It especially fails to note the context.

In both places where the mark of the beast is mentioned (Revelation 13:16-18 and 14:9-11), it is in a setting of highly symbolic imagery. Beasts are paraded, an image is set up, horns are described, there's a call to worship the beast, Babylon is fallen, and so on. We are not meant to think of literal beasts or a literal Babylon, but of powers political and religious.

We fail to be true to the context and symbolic intent of the passage if we suddenly switch to tattoos or bar codes – literal marks on the hands and foreheads.

The mark of the beast is about worship and allegiance – whom we will obey – God or man. At the end of time there will be just two classes of people – those who choose to receive the “seal of God” and those who choose to receive the “mark of the beast”.

In the Bible, the words “sign”, “seal” and “mark” are interchangeable.

The “seal of God” is connected with obedience to God's law. (Isaiah 8:16; Deuteronomy 6:1,6-8; 11:13,18; Ezekiel 9:4)

Just as the “beast” power today boasts that its inauguration of Sunday sacredness is a “mark” of its authority over the whole world, by contrast, God Himself has made the seventh day Sabbath (Saturday) the sign of His sovereignty over us, since He created this world. (Ezekiel 20:12; Exodus 31:13; 20:8-11).

The prophecy of Revelation 14 contrasts these two – compare verses 9 to 11 with verse 12. The issue is the mark of the beast versus the commandments of God.

God’s servants (Rev.7:3) are to be sealed “*in*” their foreheads (the frontal lobe of the brain, the seat of our decisions) with the name (i.e. character) of God (Exodus 34:5-7). The Holy Spirit will impress this seal in their minds. (Hebrews 8:10)

Likewise, the counterfeit spiritual mark will logically be applied “*in*” the forehead (intellectual assent) and “*in*” the hand (physical obedience - whether or not they agree, they will still obey).

You can’t have one as a tattoo and the other as not. They are both symbolic.

There is no Scriptural support for the notion of an outer tattoo “on” the forehead or “on” the hand. The mark is symbolic, just as the beast is symbolic.

However, since that is not our primary topic, we shall leave it for now.

6. The 2nd beast will appear in the form of a man

(Rev 13:17-18 - “...or the number of **his** name.... count the number of the [*lamb-like*] beast: for it is the number of **a man**.”)

Comment: Is this “man” the second beast? **NO**. He does not belong to the second beast, but to the first beast. See pages 32 to 49.

So this “man” is not Satan.

7. All on earth shall worship the 2nd beast

IT IS CLAIMED: Satan will appear as every man's God - looking like Jesus for Christians, Yahweh for Jews, Allah for Muslims, and so on. Satan will appear as the second beast. "All shall worship him". Him = Satan. "**All** who dwell on the earth will worship him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world" (Rev.13:8).

IN REALITY: Sorry to be a spoil sport here. Going back and re-reading that text (verse 8) carefully **in its context**, we discover it is **not** talking about the **second beast** at all - **but** about the **first beast** (Rome's system).

From verses 1 to 10, the prophecy is focused on the **FIRST** beast. The **SECOND** beast is not under discussion until verse 11 onwards.

Then the second beast "causeth the earth... to **worship the first beast.**" (Rev. 13:12)

The prophecy says the worship will all be directed to the **first** beast and the image of the **first** beast. The focus of worship is on the **first** beast, **not the second.** (See page 105 and 106.)

There is **nothing in Rev. 13, nor elsewhere, to show that this second beast is worshipped**, but rather he directs worship away from himself, to the first beast.

Therefore, this second beast cannot be Satan, the false Christ, because Jesus the real Christ, did, again and again, receive worship - and will be worshipped on His return. When Satan impersonates Christ, he will attract worship **to himself** as the Christ.

8. It is cast into the lake of fire at the Second Coming (Rev 19:20).

IT IS CLAIMED: This cannot apply to any nation, system or institution. Can you imagine any political or religious power or nation being cast into the lake of fire? (Ha! Ha!) **Only a person** can be cast into the lake of fire – in this case, Satan.

IN REALITY: Sorry, untrue. The Bible says that being cast into the lake of fire is **not limited to persons**.

Political and religious systems will also be burned in the lake of fire. The Bible says that the FIRST BEAST (which we know to be a POLITICAL-RELIGIOUS SYSTEM) will be BURNT up IN the lake of FIRE. Notice:

“And the **beast** was taken and with him the false prophet...These BOTH were cast alive **into a lake of fire**”. (Rev.19:20) “...the lake of fire and brimstone, **where the beast** and the false prophet are.” (Rev.20:10)
 “...the **beast** was slain, and **his body destroyed**, and **given to the burning flame**.” (Dan.7:11)

This tells us that “beast” systems, political or religious, CAN and WILL be burned up. Whatever befalls Rome (the bastion of world Catholicism) will befall the whole system worldwide. Whatever befalls America (the world bastion of corrupted Protestantism) will befall the whole system worldwide.

The systems will be consumed together with individuals.

“...and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also, **and the WORKS that are therein shall be burned up**.” (2 Pet.3:10)

What “works” will be burned up? All that man has founded in this world will be burned up – **all systems, powers and institutions** – including those end time beasts 1 and 2 of Revelation 13. When the people burn, **the system goes with them**.

The Bible specifically states that “the NATIONS... [shall be gathered] to battle... and fire...devoured them [the nations].” (Rev.20:8,9) NATIONS will be burned up. A nation, system, or institution exists only because of

the people who comprise it. When its people go into the lake of fire, the system is burnt up with them.

Similarly, the systems of “**death and hell** [are] cast **into the lake of fire**” (Rev.20:14) – meaning, simply, that death and the grave (again, *non-personal* realities) are annihilated forever.

* * * * *

You will notice that six of these above claims could indeed apply to Satan. However, we must not let these matches blind us. Because on **Points 6 and 7** Satan is disqualified totally, and on all the others above he is not the only option.

REASONS “**AGAINST**” THE SECOND BEAST BEING SATAN

On the following nine counts Satan is disqualified from being the second beast of Revelation chapter 13:

1. Satan is not the false prophet, (which is proven to be the 2nd beast)

Since the (a) second beast and the false prophet are the **same identity**, and (b) since Satan is **not** that false prophet, but rather the false christ - therefore Satan cannot be the second beast. (See pages 50 to 56.)

2. The 2nd beast is NOT in the form of a man – Satan

(See above, on Point 6 offered “for” the second beast to be Satan.)

3. “*therion*” for a beast never means a person

The word “*therion*” (translated “*beast*” in Revelation 13), is never used in Bible prophecy to denote a person. (See pages 88 and 95.)

4. The 2nd beast is not from the watery abyss (Satan’s home)

Rather it comes “out of the earth”, a place beneficent to God’s people. (See pages 73 to 87.)

5. The 2nd beast only speaks **LIKE a dragon** (Rev.13:11):

“Spake **as [like]** a dragon [i.e. spoke like Satan].”

The second beast is NOT said to be THE dragon (Satan), but only speaks “AS” or “LIKE” Satan. This is the use of a simile.

If the second beast was actually Satan himself, the text would say, “And the **dragon spake**.” But it does not say that. It says “spake **AS** [that is, like] a dragon”, indicating it is not the dragon itself.

We must read every word carefully.

The text says simply that the second beast speaks words which are **of the character of the dragon**. Of course, it is true that Satan will be motivating this second beast..

But, although all wicked powers are under the control of Satan, this cannot justify the identification of these powers as Satan personally.

Even in chapter 12, when it speaks of the dragon (serpent) wanting to destroy the baby; persecuting the woman for 1260 days, and so on, did Satan do these things personally? No, he worked through a system, identified in history as Rome.

You notice that the dragon

- (a) is a symbol of Satan, and also
- (b) it represents his earthly agency.

The same analogy is used in Isaiah chapter 14 – a prophecy concerning the historical kingdom of Babylon. Satan (Lucifer) is identified as its invisible king, operating behind the scenes, through the visible man-made kingdom. (verses 4-17) Likewise, in Ezekiel chapter 28 Satan is called the “king of Tyrus”, because he works through this earthly power. (See verses 12-19).

Just as the dragon, a symbol of Satan, also represents his earthly agency, so also does he work first through the sea beast, then through the earth beast.

Satan is definitely the power behind this second beast. Religious powers, allied to heaven by profession, and claiming to have the characteristics of innocence, will show by their acts that they have the heart of a dragon and that they are instigated and controlled by Satan.

Two important similes are used here in verse 11:

- horns LIKE a lamb
- spake AS a dragon

This second beast is not THE Lamb (Jesus).
Neither is it THE dragon (Satan).

In using these similes, the text **neither says the beast is Jesus, nor Satan**. Both similes are on an equal footing. It is neither Jesus nor Satan – but simply LIKE OR AS.

The notion that the second beast is Satan himself, though perhaps an attractive idea, unfortunately is **not Scriptural**.

6. Satan never stands for civil and religious liberty, which are implied by the 2nd beast's lamb-like horns.

The second beast has **two lamb-like horns**. (Rev.13:11) Please note. It's **the horns, not the beast**, which are lamb-like. (See pages 100-102.)

We are all agreed that horns indicate power, authority. (Hab.3:4 ; Zech.1:21) The succeeding verses of Revelation 13 concerning this second beast show that it exercises **authority in two realms**:

1. **state** authority (political and economic – vv.12,16,17), and
2. **religious** (v.15).

Remember that it is NOT THE BEAST that appears innocent like a lamb, BUT THE HORNS. The prophecy focuses on THE HORNS that have that “innocence” quality.

Two separate horns indicates the **separateness** of these two powers initially. Since “**horns** like those of a lamb” also suggests youthful innocence, this is consistent with civil and religious **gentleness and freedom** (separation of church and state).

However, Satan **never** stands for civil and religious liberty, nor will he in the future. This fact makes Satan an unlikely candidate for being the second beast.

7. Unlike Satan, the 2nd beast will derive its power from the 1st beast.

(See pages 107 to 109.)

8. Unlike Satan, the 2nd beast is subordinate to the first beast

This has already been addressed earlier (on pages 103-105). But it can bear repeating. When SATAN **impersonates Christ**, he will put himself forward to be worshipped as Jesus Christ.

By contrast,

- * the second beast will not demand worship of itself – except as it becomes an **image of the first beast**. (Rev.13:15)
- * It has stature only in its relation to the first beast. The focus of worship is on the first beast. (See verses 12,14)
- * “And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him [the first beast] whose names are not written in the book of life...” (v.8)

Thus the SECOND BEAST does not draw worship toward itself as the chief entity of the two, but directs worship to another as being the chief.

Revelation 13 keeps telling us that **of the 2 beasts, the more important is the first:**

- v.8 – “all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him [the first beast].”
- v.12 – “exerciseth the power of the first beast”
- v.12 – “causeth... to worship the first beast”
- v.14 - “in the sight of the [first] beast”
- v.14 – “make an image to the [first] beast, which had the wound”

As for the second beast:

- It is empowered by the first beast.
- It calls on the world to make a likeness to the first beast.
- It calls on the world to worship the first beast.

It's **all in honour of the first beast.**

It is unscriptural to think that the second beast is more important than the first beast. These texts state clearly that **the first beast is the boss, not the second beast.**

We know that Satan is supreme above all evil powers – and that he will always focus upon himself. (Isaiah 14:12-14 ; Matthew 4:9) **By contrast,** the second beast will focus worship on the first beast. It is the first beast that is pre-eminent – not the second beast.

Don't you think it strange that if the second beast is Satan **visibly appearing for all to worship him,** that **this prophecy** doesn't come straight out and **say so?** After all, the Bible tells us that Satan above all else craves worship. But here in Revelation 13 we see the second beast drawing worship NOT TO ITSELF, **but to the first beast.**

Rather odd, when you think it through.

This is another evidence that the second beast is **NOT SATAN.**

9. Unlike Satan, the 2nd beast will promote the 1st beast over itself

(See pages 105 to 106.)

That is *not* what Satan will do.

10. It is not the 2nd beast, but the 1st beast that receives worship

(Rev.13:8,12)

Satan, therefore, is not the second beast. End of story.

You want some good, biblical REASONS? There... you have them.

Early one morning, a mother went in to wake up her son.

"Wake up, son. It's time to go to school!"

"But why, Mom? I don't want to go."

"Give me **two reasons why** you don't want to go."

"Well, the kids hate me for one, and the teachers hate me also!"

"Oh, that's no reason not to go to school. Come on now and get ready."

"Give me **two reasons why** I should go to school."

"Well, for one, you're 52 years old. And for another, you're the PRINCIPAL!"

Well... Do you want some good reasons?

Do you want two good, biblical REASONS why we should **go back to school** on this prophecy? Are these reasons not staring us in the face? And more than just two.

Nice theory... Dramatic...Exciting... but don't ever bet your life on it!

HOW TO GET THE TRUTH

After all, the bottom line is that we want the TRUTH. **But not just facts. The facts have to be CONNECTED.**

Suppose you ask me why I have taped garlic onto my letter box, and I reply, “Because it keeps the wild elephants out of my street.”

“But,” you point out, “There are no wild elephants in the whole country.”

And I beam, “See? The garlic is working!”

You might recommend a psychiatrist.

Can you see what is the problem with my theory? After all, haven’t I given you two facts? (a) Garlic on my letterbox, and (b) no wild elephants in my street. Two true facts.

But you will point out that these two FACTS bear no relationship to each other whatsoever. These two UNRELATED FACTS do not give me the TRUTH!

I must stick to DIRECT RELATIONSHIPS. Assumptions, speculations and conjecture are OUT! For a correct understanding of Bible prophecy, we must put aside conjecture, assumption, opinion, speculation, and guessing. All these are forbidden.

6

“PROOFS” THAT FAILED

We shall now summarise the claims made to support the idea that the Revelation 13 earth beast is a single person, such as Satan.

In the left hand column of the boxes below are 18 claimed proofs. In the right hand column is a brief summary of Bible evidence against these claims.

CLAIMED PROOFS THAT THE 2ND BEAST IS SATAN	THE BIBLE ANSWER GIVEN
<p>1. The “man” in Rev.13:18 refers to the second beast, which will be the “man” Satan appearing.</p>	<p>1. The “man”, the mark, and the image, all belong to the first beast, not to the second beast. (Compare these - Rev.13:14; 14:11 ; 13:17-18)</p>
<p>2. The “man of sin” (2 Thess. 2) is not the papal system centred on a man, but Satan personally.</p>	<p>2. The “man of sin” is not Satan himself, but one who follows “after the workings of Satan”. (2 Thess.2:9)</p>
<p>3. The (a) dragon,(b) beast and (c) false prophet are not three, but two entities. Satan is (a) and (c).</p>	<p>3. Bible calls them “three” entities, with “three” symbolic mouths. (Rev.16:13 ;20:10)</p>
<p>4. John believed the earth was flat with “bottomless” hole in the ground.</p>	<p>4. John knew our earth was round, rotates, & hangs in space. (Isa.40:22; Job 38:14; 26:7)</p>

CLAIMED PROOFS THAT THE 2ND BEAST IS SATAN	THE BIBLE ANSWER GIVEN
<p>5. John's mind-set gives us the term "<i>bottomless pit</i>" (<i>abyss</i>) in Revelation.</p>	<p>5. John's mind-set did not guide him, but the Holy Spirit did. (2 Pet.1:21; Rev.21:5; 22:6)</p>
<p>6. Satan was cast "into the earth: and will come "out of the earth". Because Satan was cast "into the earth", his assumed abode is "in the earth" (<i>abyss</i>). So the second beast coming "out of the earth" is Satan.</p>	<p>6. Though "earth" (both in Gr. and Eng.) is one word, it is used 2 ways. 1. As a planet in contrast to heaven: "in heaven... he was cast out into the earth." (Rev. 12:7,9) 2. As the land section of our planet in contrast to sea: "inhabiters of the earth, and of the sea"; "out of the sea"; "out of the earth". (Rev.12:12 ; 13: 1,11) You can't mix these 2 meanings. You can't say that because Satan was cast down to planet earth, then the beast that rises out of the dry ground earth means Satan.</p>
<p>7. Satan's assumed home, the "<i>abyss</i>" (<i>bottomless pit</i>) is in the earth (dry land). So he'll come out of the earth.</p>	<p>7. In Bible symbolism, Satan is "the dragon that is <i>in the sea</i>". (Isa.27:1) So he cannot be the beast that comes "out of the earth".</p>
<p>8. You say the Hebrew "<i>teh-home</i>" in Old Testament means <i>watery deep</i>, but the Greek word "<i>abussos</i>" (<i>abyss</i>, <i>bottomless pit</i>) in the New Testament does NOT mean "<i>watery deep</i>". It is dry land, earth.</p>	<p>8. The New Testament says the beast that comes "out of the <i>bottomless pit</i>" (<i>abyss</i>) (Rev.17:3,7,8) is coming "out of the <i>sea</i>". (13:1,3) So <i>abussos</i> (<i>abyss</i>) does not mean dry earth, but sea.</p>

CLAIMED PROOFS THAT THE 2ND BEAST IS SATAN	THE BIBLE ANSWER GIVEN
<p>9. Jesus was about to cast unclean spirits out of a person and they pleaded, “Don’t cast us into the <i>abyss</i>.” But WHY would Jesus cast these unclean spirits into the <i>deep sea</i>?</p>	<p>9. Because the Bible says so! They cried, “Don’t send us into the <i>deep (abyss)</i>.” But He did just that to them! He acted out the Bible symbolism of <i>abussos</i> as meaning the sea, in real life. (Luke 8:31-33 Matt.8:32)</p>
<p>10. A Hebrew expert “states that <i>teh-home</i> in the Old Testament Hebrew and <i>abyss</i> in the New Testament Greek are two separate words which should not be used interchangeably for the purpose of interpreting their meaning.”</p>	<p>10. I informed that same Hebrew expert that where the Hebrew says <i>teh-home [watery deep]</i>, the Septuagint [Greek Bible] uses the word <i>abussos</i>. “Oh,” he said, “that changes things.” The Hebrew <i>teh-home</i> and Greek <i>abussos</i> are, indeed, interchangeable. That settles it.</p>
<p>11. According to Daniel 7, a beast represents a person. It is kings that shall arise out of the earth (not the kingdoms). “These great beasts, which are four, are four kings that shall arise.” (Dan.7:17) So the second beast in Rev.13 can represent a person – Satan.</p>	<p>11. Both the Hebrew Bible and the Septuagint Greek Bible used by the apostles render this verse: “These four beasts are four kingdoms that shall rise up on the earth.” (Dan.7:17) And this is confirmed in verse 23: “The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth.” This tells us that each of the symbolic beasts is not a single individual person, but an empire.</p>
<p>12. A king always has a kingdom, and Satan, as the second beast of Rev.13 will have his kingdom – the New World Order.</p>	<p>12. ALL of the empires are Satan’s kingdoms. But Satan’s papal New World Order is the first beast (not the second). (Rev.13:7,8)</p>

CLAIMED PROOFS THAT THE 2ND BEAST IS SATAN	THE BIBLE ANSWER GIVEN
<p>13. Because this second beast is Satan personating Jesus, the Lamb, this second beast has two horns like “THE” Lamb.(The “<i>a lamb</i>” should be replaced with the definite article here).</p>	<p>13. Both the original Greek and English correctly omit the definite article, telling us that the horns are NOT like those of THE Lamb, but like those of “A” young lamb. (Rev.13:11)</p>
<p>14. The second beast will eventually speak as THE dragon – so it is Satan.</p>	<p>14. It does not say THE dragon. Again, no definite article. The beast will speak only “AS” (LIKE) “A” dragon – a persecutor. (Rev.13:11)</p>
<p>15. The second beast (Satan) will be granted its power “from God”.</p>	<p>15. Nothing of the kind. The second beast gets its power from the first beast. (v.12)</p>
<p>16. It is the second beast that gives the first beast its power.</p>	<p>16. The Bible says the opposite. The first beast exercises the power that belongs to the dragon, given to it by the dragon. Then the second beast exercises the power of the first beast. This shows the second beast as subordinate to the first beast. (Rev.13:2,12)</p>
<p>17. Rev.13:8 says “All the earth shall worship” the second beast.</p>	<p>17. This verse 8 is speaking about the first beast, not the second beast. Look it up</p>
<p>18. The second beast being finally cast into the lake of fire means it has to be an individual person – Satan – because how can you burn up a nation or a political or religious organization?</p>	<p>18. The Bible says the first beast (papal system) is cast into the lake of fire. (Dan.7:11. Rev.19:20 ; 20:10) And the symbolic woman riding it (a religious organisation) is burned also. (Rev.17:16) So, to be burned up, the second beast does NOT have to be a person.</p>

The wrong man

"FBI Apologizes to American Lawyer Wrongly Arrested" was the title of an Associated Press story that appeared in the *San Luis Obispo Tribune* on May 26, 2004.

A terrorist bombing had occurred in Spain killing 191 people and FBI fingerprint evidence pointed to Portland attorney Brandon Mayfield - a Muslim - as the guilty one. Mayfield was thrown in jail.

But the FBI soon discovered they had the wrong man. The *Tribune* declared, "Court documents released Monday suggested that the mistaken arrest first sprang from an error by the FBI's supercomputer for matching fingerprints."

The embarrassed agency then acknowledged the need to "review its practices on fingerprint analysis."

Well, it appears that the "Satan" theorist's "fingerprint analysis" pointing to Satan as the earth beast has been in error! Like the FBI in 2004, he has identified the wrong "man".

Failures of 18 supposed "proofs"

Our "Satan theory" friend came up with 18 supposed proofs. Nice try. And it must have been hard work dreaming them up.

But now we have discovered (to our horror) that not one of these 18 "proofs" does the Bible allow. Not one of them!

So where are all the texts that should be there if the theory is true? I don't know, either.

7**SUMMARY OF
THE REV 13 BEASTS**

Revelation chapter 13 gives us a picture of the entire world's power structure at the end of time.

It does this under the symbol of two beasts that work together... two agents through whom Satan carries out his war against the people of God.

8

IS THIS PROPHECY ALREADY FULFILLING?

Expected by Bible students

After the Reformation restored the Bible to the people, dedicated scholars in all branches of the Protestant movement were earnestly researching the prophecies.

From the study of Revelation 13, there was awakened an expectation that

- (f) the papal rule over Europe was soon to receive a deadly wound; and
- (g) an end times super power would soon emerge onto the global scene.

In 1754, John Wesley wrote of the second beast of Revelation 13:

“He has not yet come, though he cannot be far off. For he is to appear at the end of forty-two months [1260 years] of the first beast.” (John Wesley, *Explanatory Notes upon the New Testament*, p. 735, comment on Revelation 13:11)

Not always in time sequence

Before going any further, we should be clear on the following fact, because a misunderstanding may lead us to wrong conclusions.

Events within a prophecy are **NOT always in chronological order**. It is a mistake to assume that they are. John does NOT always write them that way.

Let's put this to the test:

Take, for example the prophecy of the dragon in chapter 12:

- * v.5 – Jesus' birth
- * v.5 – Jesus' ascension
- * v.6 – The church flees into the wilderness
- * v.6 – 1260 day-years
- * vv.7-9 – Satan cast out of heaven
- * v.13 – Persecution of the church

You will notice, in **verse 13**, that “WHEN the dragon **saw that he was cast unto the earth**, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child.” So the woman then had to flee into the wilderness – verse 14. This is a recapitulation of verse 6. It is **a direct result of Satan realising he has been cast out of heaven**.

According to verse 13, the event of the woman fleeing from persecution occurs **straight AFTER Satan is cast out of heaven**. (In **verse 6** this event is listed after Jesus' ascension to heaven – **a similar time frame**.)

If we follow the sequence of verses here, it might seem that Satan was cast out of heaven **AFTER** the 1260 years. But from other Scriptures we know that this is not so. Satan was cast out of heaven **BEFORE** the persecution period of 1260 years.

When you examine the above list, it becomes obvious that all these events are **not in historical sequence**.

When we test the assumption that all events within a prophecy are listed in sequence, we find this to be not necessarily so.

Likewise, the events concerning the sea beast of Revelation 13 are not necessarily in chronological order.

- * vv. 1,2 – Rise of the sea beast
- * v. 3 – The deadly wound
- * v. 3 – The wound healed
- * vv. 3,4 – The world wonders after the beast
- * vv. 5,6 – It blasphemes
- * v. 6 – Continues 42 months
- * v. 7 – It persecutes
- * v. 8 – All on earth worship it
- * vv. 9,10 – It goes into captivity

We should be open to the fact that prophecies are presented to us in three ways:

1. sometimes as totally chronological;
2. other times simply identifying the power involved, by a string of ID points; and
3. other times with flashbacks which help explain the current story. (Because these are flashbacks, by necessity they interrupt the chronological sequence.)

If you don't agree, it is because you haven't got the point. This is totally biblical. Go back and check this again – carefully, this time.

Comparing the time period terms

John Wesley and other Bible students saw the 42 months as **an identifying factor** rather than chronological. They saw the 1260 year period referred to seven times, as:

- * **time, times, and ½ time** (Dan.7:25)
- * **time, times, and ½ time** (Dan.12:7)
- * **42 months** (Rev.11:2)
- * **1260 days** (Rev.11:3)
- * **1260 days** (Rev.12:6)
- * **time, times and ½ time** (Rev.12:14)
- * **42 months** (42 x 30 = 1260 days) (Rev.13:6)

They noted that each term was interchangeable with the others.

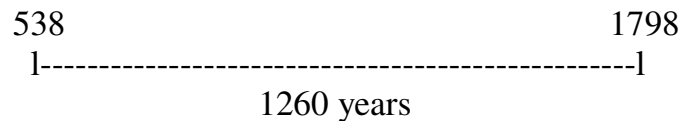
Time	=	360 days	
Times	=	720 days	42 months
½ Time	=	<u>180 days</u>	<u>x 30</u>
		1,260 days	1260 days

And in symbolic prophecy they recognized each day to represent a year of real history. (e.g. Numbers 14:34 ; Ezekiel 4:6 and other passages)

They knew that Bible prophecy had foretold that over the nations emerging from the ruins of the old Roman Empire, the Roman papacy would rule for a period of 1260 years.

Expected: Rome's power “to end about 1800”

And as early as 1698, Bible scholar Drew Cresener recognized that the papal reign was approaching the end of this predicted 1260 year period of rule.



With this in mind, Cresener was moved to write that something drastic was to befall the papacy about the year 1800.

Expected: “When first beast wounded, second beast will rise”

A number of Bible researchers looked for the end of papal Rome's rule to occur around 1800. And **they expected the second beast of Revelation 13 to arise about that same time.**

That is why John Wesley wrote in 1754. “He has not yet come, though he cannot be far off. For he is to appear at the end of forty-two months [1260 years] of the first beast.” (John Wesley, *Explanatory Notes upon the New Testament*, p. 735, comment on Revelation 13:11)

As Bible scholars studied Revelation, they were driven to the conclusion that around the time the first power was to go into captivity, another power would be emerging.

“He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and faith of the saints. And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth...”
(Rev.13:10,11)

God's people are called upon to patiently endure, because the end of Rome's rule is in sight.

Rome, having led others into captivity (Dan.11:33) will now herself go into captivity, “and all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.” This is a quotation from Matthew 26:52.

This is how the early Protestant reformers understood this prophetic passage. They expected the second beast of Revelation 13 to arise sometime around the end of Rome’s 1260 year reign.

Did they understand this passage correctly? Is the papal captivity really referred to in Revelation 13:10 – or is that a mistaken interpretation? We shall examine this question on pages 138 to 141.

We shall shortly see evidence that **one power, or system matches ALL the requirements of the prophecy** – and that is the Protestant American system.

Why not Russia or some other power?

OBJECTION: You indicate America will be a key player in these events. Even if America is behind Russia accepting papal laws; hasn’t Russia played just as a significant role, by agreeing to this in the first place? The same would have to be asked regarding China, Japan, the Middle East, etc. Although America will be significant due to its size and influence, why should God single America out, and record it in these particular end time prophetic events? Why not Russia, or Iran, China, or some other power?

ANSWER: Because Protestant America, and no other, meets EVERY requirement of the prophecy, as we shall see.

We shall re-visit this question as we go through the specifications. (See pages 146 to 148.)

When is a power mentioned in prophecy?

On what conditions have nations been given a place in prophecy?

1. When they have acted a **prominent place in world history**.
2. When they have had **jurisdiction over, or maintained important relations with, the people of God**.

From the records of the Bible and history, we find this to be so. A nation enters prophecy **when the work and destiny of God's people are definitely linked to it**.

Governor Pownall, an English statesman, in 1780 spoke of the expected establishment of America as a free and sovereign power, as "a revolution that has stranger marks of *divine interposition*, superseding the ordinary course of human affairs, than any other event which this world has experienced." (Quoted by Hon. Charles Sumner, "Prophetic Voices About America," *Atlantic Monthly*, September, 1867, p. 290)

Indeed, the rise and progress of Protestant America has been of such a nature that Providence saw fit to forecast it in prophecy.

A KEY PLAYER IN SPIRITUAL HISTORY

America is **the powerful world representative of the great Protestant movement** God raised up to throw off the shackles of the much prophesied papal beast – and which **brought spiritual freedom to millions** of God's people. The Constitution guaranteed freedom for all, whatever one's religion – a major **first in history**.

This alone qualifies it for a place in Bible prophecy. Considering its role, one might be surprised if it was not mentioned.

Why is America mentioned? Here's another good reason.

Rome ruled the world when Jesus came the first time. And Rome will rule the world until Jesus comes the second time. Apart from Jesus Christ Himself, the BIGGEST, most talked about entity in the prophecies of Daniel and Revelation, is Satan's masterpiece of deception on earth, the Roman papacy.

The Revelation 13 prophecy focuses on this most brutal truth-hating power of all time. THEN the spotlight shifts to something that will catch the world by surprise. **The mightiest stronghold of freedom since the world began**, trusted refuge for the persecuted, **switches color and tosses the world into the arms of that brutal power**. If that's not a good enough reason for America to be enshrined in prophecy, then what is?

The greatest super-power the world has ever seen is **the VATICAN**. Not only the wealthiest power on earth, it operates the world's best intelligence network – over a million priests and nuns – whose loyalty is first and foremost to the Vatican, above any loyalty to their own country of residence. Its one billion subjects are positioned within the borders of almost every nation on earth – and its Jesuits have infiltrated into the strategic positions of power in practically every nation. There is no more powerful institution or nation on earth.

The second greatest super-power in world history is **PROTESTANT AMERICA**. And the Vatican has singled out America to be its world policeman, its enforcer.

It would be surprising if Bible prophecy ignored these two major end time players.

So why don't we just check out what we are told about this:

1. NOT AN INDIVIDUAL PERSON, BUT A CORPORATE RULING POWER

"I saw **another** beast" (Rev.13:11)

Please note these points carefully:

1. The first beast is not a person, but a power, a system. The description of this second beast as "*allos*", another of the same kind, is consistent with its being another power, another system, **like all the previous beasts of prophecy**. (See pages 97 to 99.)

2. Since the first beast is a state power allied to and representing a major religious system, is it reasonable to expect the second beast to be a state power allied to and representing a major religious system?

We are told that it is “*allos*”, another of the same kind.

And, backing this up, the prophecy describes this second beast as engaging in religious activities, even though it has ruling authority in secular matters. (See verses 12-17.)

This leads to the question, does America represent a major religious system? The answer is, of course, yes. Just as Rome represents world Catholicism, so is America the beating heart of Protestantism, now in a fallen (apostate) condition.

America is representative of world Protestantism, the embodiment of its principles.

Protestant America fits this specification of the prophecy like a glove.

2. SECOND BEAST COMES UP AS FIRST BEAST WOUNDED

“And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death... He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be killed with the sword... And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth...” (Rev.13:3,10,11)

CORRUPTED VERSIONS

It is important to be aware that some modern Bible versions, which have departed from the traditional Majority Text, render this verse to mean something different, such as:

“If anyone is to go into captivity, into captivity he will go. If anyone is to be killed with the sword, with the sword he will be killed.” (NIV)

Please be aware of the following:

- * This rendering stems from certain modern versions.
- * These versions are based on only 1% of the Greek manuscripts – a handful of corrupted manuscripts which came through Rome – who hates the Majority Text (99% of all Greek manuscripts), upon which our King James Bible is based.

A CHALLENGE

If anyone insists that the Rome-influenced modern versions have rendered Rev.13:10 correctly, then the burden is on one to defend that stand and prove it. But let me warn you that this modern rendering is contrary to what God gave us. It comes from the corrupted manuscripts which are an insult to our Lord.

If you have not read my book *The Sorcerers' Secret*, please ask for a copy. It is solidly based on research over 14 years into the manuscripts, both pure and corrupted – and the evidence will take you right back to the apostles. I plead with you to sift through this evidence carefully. You will be shocked at how honest Christians have been misled.

I challenge every reader of this report, even if you have made an HONEST MISTAKE as a result of following one of Rome's new versions – to make an about turn, before God, and start using – and believing – an HONEST VERSION, such as the King James Bible.

You may have to change your theories about some of the Revelation prophecies, but you will stay honest and God will bless you.

All evidence presented in this study will be taken from the King James Version of the Bible. Because of the deliberate adulterations of the modern New Age versions of the Bible, it is imperative that one reading the Bible in English uses the King James Bible.

Here is Rev.13:10 again, first in original Greek, then in English:

εἴ τις εἰς αἰχμαλωσίαν ἀπάγει, εἰς αἰχμαλωσίαν ὑπάγει· εἴ τις ἐν μαχαίρᾳ ἀποκτενέει, δεῖ αὐτὸν ἐν μαχαίρᾳ ἀποκτανθῆναι.

“He that **leadeth** into captivity shall go into captivity: he that **killeth** with the sword must be killed with the sword.”

The word translated “*leadeth*” comes from the Greek “*sunago*” (*Strong*, 483), which means “*to lead together*”. This is an amalgamation of two words:

1. “*ago*” (*Strong*, 71), meaning “*to bring, drive, carry, etc*” and
2. “*sun*” (*Strong*, 4862), meaning “*with, together*”.

So the correct translation is “He that brings, drives, carries together [others] into captivity shall go into captivity himself.”

The word translated “*killeth*” comes from the Greek “*apocteino*” (Strong, 615), which means to “*put to death, kill, slay*”.

So the correct translation of that portion of Revelation 13:10 is “He that kills with the sword must be killed with the sword.”

This harmonises with the words of Jesus, “He that kills with the sword shall perish with the sword.” (Matthew 26:52)

This principle is strongly presented throughout the Bible:

- “Whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.” (Gal.6:7)
- “They shall eat the fruit of their doings.” (Isa.3:10,11)

Now John pronounces this same verdict of poetic justice (tit for tat) to the first beast of Revelation 13 – the beast that receives a deadly wound on one of its heads.

A supporting evidence is in the obvious connection between:

- Rev.13:3 – “*wounded to death*” (first beast)
- verse 4 – “*had the wound BY THE SWORD*” (first beast)
- verse 11 – “*must be killed WITH THE SWORD*” (first beast)

The repetition of this single topic screams out for us to take note.

The papal captivity took place in 1798.

THE PROPHECY: John Wesley and others, seeing this date approaching, would be correct in joining the dots – and expecting the second beast to arise about the time the first beast goes into captivity.

“And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death... He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be killed with the sword... And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth...” (Rev.13:3,10,11)

THE FULFILMENT: The papal captivity took place in 1798. A new power was seen emerging at that time – around 1798.

The prophecy does not require the second beast to emerge in one particular year, but does suggest the same general time frame.

As we progress, it will be seen that only the **Protestant American system** – and this alone – fits all requirements of the prophecy.

History shows us that the United States:

- declared its independence in 1776
- voted the Constitution in 1787
- adopted the bill of rights in 1791
- and received first international recognition as a nation in 1798 – the very same year that the papacy received its deadly wound.

The timing obviously fits Protestant America.

By coincidence or design, it was almost precisely at the time when the sea beast

- went into captivity,
- was killed with the sword. (v.10),

that John saw the earth beast coming up.

- (a) If the sea beast (as can be proven) signifies the papal system, and
- (b) if the going into captivity met its fulfilment in the temporary forced abolition of the papacy by the French in 1798,
- (c) then we have the time definitely specified when we are to look for the rise of the earth beast power.

3. NOT IN THE OLD WORLD

“I saw another beast coming up **out of the earth.**” (Rev.13:11)

We saw on pages 79 to 85, that in prophetic symbolism:

(a) EARTH IS DEFINITELY CONTRASTED WITH SEA.

You will notice how the coming up of the two beasts of Revelation 13, is contrasted:

1. The first beast rises “OUT OF THE SEA” (v. 1) – which chapter 17:15 explains as “nations, and kindreds, and tongues, and peoples” – meaning that the first beast rises in a populated region among the nations, and kindreds, and tongues, and peoples. The same symbol of the sea is found in the Old Testament: “Behold, a people shall come from the

north, and a great nation, and many kings shall... roar like the sea.”
(Jer.50:41-42) Thus the sea is a symbol of the restless, warring, heaving nations of mankind. (See also Isa.17:12,13)

2. In obvious contrast, the second beast rises not out of the sea of nations, but “OUT OF THE EARTH” (v.11) – hinting that it rises up somewhere away from that sea of nations.

The appearance of this beast and the manner of its rise seem to indicate that the power which it represents is unlike those brought to view under the preceding symbols.

The great kingdoms that have ruled the world obtained their dominion by conquest and revolution, and they were presented to the prophet Daniel as beasts of prey, rising when the “four winds of the heaven strove upon the great sea.” (Dan. 7:2) But the beast with horns like a lamb is seen “coming up out of the earth;” (**Rev. 13:11**) signifying that **instead of overthrowing other powers to establish itself**, the nation thus represented arose in territory previously unoccupied, and grew up gradually and peacefully.

It could not, then, arise among the crowded and struggling nationalities of the Old World – that turbulent sea of “peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.” It must be sought somewhere away from that sea of nations.

(b) EARTH IS A WILDERNESS REGION

The second clue is this: The “THE EARTH” is a symbol used in chapter 12 to indicate a sparsely populated, wilderness region. (See pages 80-81.)

This specification does not apply to Britain, France, Russia, Iran, or any nation of Europe or Asia. An old power of the Eastern and European hemisphere would not qualify to meet this description.

It rises in a sparsely populated wilderness region of the world. **It does not** rise in the Old World.

Being described as “another” beast, “coming up out of the earth” (instead of the “sea”), it must be found in some territory not covered by any other symbols.

- Babylon and Medo-Persia covered all the civilized part of Asia.
- Greece covered Eastern Europe, including Russia.
- Rome, with the ten kingdoms into which it was divided, covered all Western Europe. In other words, all of the Old World that interacted significantly with God's people is covered by prophetic symbols.

But there is a mighty ruling power in the Western Hemisphere, worthy of being mentioned in prophecy, which is not yet brought in. Of all the powers on earth for which any reason exists that should be mentioned in prophecy, one alone, Protestant America, remains.

Does the earth beast represent the United States? If it does, then all the symbols find an application, and all the ground is covered. If it does not, it follows that the United States is not represented in prophecy, and the symbol of the earth beast is left without a nation to which it can apply.

But the first of these suppositions is not probable, and the second is not possible.

4. HAS ELEMENTS OF POWER SUGGESTING THE INNOCENCE OF YOUTH

“He had two horns like a lamb.” (Rev.13:11)

In plain English, the thought is of ***“two little horns like those of a lamb”***. The horns of a lamb have hardly begun to grow. The lamb-like feature applies to the horns, not to the beast. The lamb-likeness of the horns **indicates youthfulness**. (See pages 100 to 102.)

Youthful, like the horns of “a lamb” – “a young power” – does not apply to Britain, France, Russia, Iran, or any nation of Europe or Asia.

An old power of the Eastern and European hemisphere would not qualify to meet this description. Again, this earth beast does not rise in the Old World.

5. GROWS UP SILENTLY, PEACEFULLY

“I saw another beast **coming up** out of the earth.” (Rev.13:11)

Just as important as WHERE it comes up, is **HOW**.

The Greek word chosen here for “coming up” is “*anabainon*”. What does this mean?

In Matthew 13:7 it is used of plants growing up. When “*anabainon*” (“coming up”) is combined with “the earth” (as in “coming up out of the earth”) it conveys the meaning of “growing up out of the earth like a seed.”

The second beast will grow up silently and peacefully. It is gentle in its manner of rising, like a plant gently emerging from the earth.

It will spring up like a plant, silently and peacefully.

When we compare this text with the comments of secular historians, the result is breathtaking:

A prominent writer speaks of “the mystery of her **coming forth from vacancy**,” noting also that “The history of the United States was separated by a beneficent providence ...and **like a silent seed** we grew into an empire.” (G.A. Townsend, *The New World Compared With the Old*, p.635)

“...emerging... **amid the silence of the earth.**” (Dublin *Nation*, c. 1850)

We often see, when a Bible prophecy is fulfilled, that secular historians describe the event in almost the same terms as the Bible prophecy of that event. This is a common phenomenon. It is almost uncanny.

America did not rise to power due to her overthrowing/conquering another empire, but by quietly growing up.

6. POSSESSES TWO FEATURES OF STRENGTH

“...**two horns** like those of a lamb” (Rev.13:11)

This second beast rises with two lamb-like horns.

- (a) “**Lamb-like**” suggests both youth and innocence.
- (b) **Horns** indicate power, authority. (Hab.3:4 ; Zech.1:21)

The succeeding verses in Revelation 13 elaborate on this authority, showing us that this earth beast exercises authority in two realms:

1. state authority (political and economic – vv.12,16,17), and
2. religious (v.15).

If the lamb’s horns suggest youthful **innocence**, this would be consistent with **civil and religious freedom** (separation of church and state).

The “**two horns** like a lamb” well represent the character of the United States Government, as expressed in its two fundamental principles, Republicanism (civil freedom) and Protestantism (religious freedom).

This is in accord with the definition of horns as kingdoms. (Dan.8:3,20) Jesus, in His parables, referred to His Church as “the kingdom of God”, “the kingdom of heaven”. Then there is the State, or political kingdom. As the two horns are separate, so are the kingdom of the Church and the kingdom of the State separate yet within the one nation.

This separation, taught by Jesus in Matthew 22:21, would give civil and religious freedom. This would also make this nation an anti-Catholic power, since Rome has declared her opposition to such separation. Rome’s declared policy is that the State must be under the control of the Church.

The two horns are the separated powers of civil and religious freedom.

For the first time in history was a nation established on these two principles. With freedom of religious faith, every man was permitted to worship God according to the dictates of his conscience. *Republicanism and Protestantism* became the fundamental principles of the nation.

These principles are **the secret of its power** and prosperity. The oppressed and down-trodden throughout Christendom have turned to this land with interest and hope.

THE EARTH helped the woman.” (Rev.12:16)

Persecuted Christians left Europe for a better life in the New World. The

Pilgrim Fathers landed in America...seeking religious liberty. They brought the Bible with them.

Those who founded the Protestant United States based their Constitution on two great principles, civil and religious liberty. The motto was “WE THE PEOPLE” – Protestant America gives liberty to all. These two principles – civil and religious liberty – were to be **the secrets of Protestant America’s strength.**

And something else. After showing crowns on the sea beast, the absence of crowns on the earth beast would suggest a government in which the power is not vested in any monarchy, but is lodged in the hands of the people.

From verse 14 we learn that appeal is made to the people when any national action is to be performed: “Saying to them that dwell on the earth, that *they* [the people] should make an image to the beast.”

This suggests a democratic, or republican, form of government.

Repeating an earlier question: Why not Russia or some other power?

To re-visit the question: Why not Russia, or Iran, China, or some other power? ANSWER: **In all of history, no other ruling power fits this specification.**

For example, no penal colony, like Australia, with the cruel exactions upon prisoners, could possibly be described as having horns like an innocent lamb.

We asked earlier, On what conditions have nations been given a place in prophecy?

And the answer was:

1. When they have acted a prominent place in world history.
2. When they have had jurisdiction over, or maintained important relations with, the people of God.

From the records of the Bible and history, we find this to be so. A nation enters prophecy **when the work and destiny of God's people are definitely linked to it.**

The rise and progress of Protestant America has been of such a nature that Providence saw fit to forecast it in prophecy.

When prophecies of world conditions fill a third of the entire Bible – and when a large percentage of all those prophecies pertains to national and international world happenings of **our** time, now, could Protestant America **be ignored** in these prophecies?

“DIVINE INTERPOSITION”

We noted earlier how Governor Pownall, an English statesman in 1780, called the establishment of the USA “a revolution that has stronger marks of divine interposition superseding the ordinary course of human affairs than any other event which this world has experienced.”

Eight facts that should be noted are that:

1. No nation has ever acquired so vast a territory in so quiet a manner.
2. No nation has ever risen to such greatness by so peaceable means.
3. No nation has ever advanced so rapidly in all that constitutes national strength and capital.
4. No nation has ever arisen to such a pinnacle of power in a space of time so incredibly short.
5. No nation in so limited a time has developed such unlimited resources.
6. No nation has ever existed founded on principles of justice so pure and undefiled.
7. No nation has ever existed in which the consciences of men have been left so untrammelled and free.
8. In no nation and in no age has the gospel found such freedom to spread its principles and develop its strength.

Freedom is the essence of America – freedom of speech, freedom of assembly, freedom from fear, freedom of religion. Martin Luther King said, “America is essentially a dream. It is a dream of freedom and equality. And freedom is the way to equality.”

This is **the first time in world history** that any world ruling power has been **founded on biblical principles** – which has enabled the gospel of these last days to explode its influence **as never before** – and in ways that might never otherwise have become possible.

This has *affected God's people in a positive manner more than any other ruling power in history.*

If this power was NOT mentioned in prophecy, we might well wonder WHY NOT?

How astonishingly accurate this prophecy has become! Never in world history has any power fulfilled these specifications... except one.

7. THIS CHANGES TO OPPRESSIVE AUTHORITY IN TWO REALMS: *POLITICAL/FINANCIAL AND RELIGIOUS*

“And he had **power** to... cause that as many as would not **worship**... should **be killed**...And he **causeth all**, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark...**and that no man might buy or sell**...” (Rev.13:15-17)

In the previous section we suggested that the second beast's two horns indicate **civil and religious authority**. How do we know? The later verses identify these two elements of power, as we shall now see. In the first appearance of the beast, as it rises from the earth, these two horns appear young and innocent – like those of a young lamb.

But imagine if these freedoms were taken away... What would be lost? Well, these two horns of power are identified further, as we watch this second beast changing character. Its authority in the realms of state and religion ultimately become oppressive:

1. Political and economic pressure will be brought against all who refuse to violate their conscience by accepting the mark of the beast.
(Rev.13:12,15-17)

2. Religious laws involving “worship” will be enforced with penalties.
(Rev.13:15)

8. WILL EXERT WORLD-WIDE INFLUENCE

“And he... **causeth the world** and them that dwell therein to...”
(Rev.13:12)

The second beast grows into **a super power** – strong enough to dictate to the whole world. It exercises a world wide influence. The whole world follows its example (vv.12,16,17).

Let’s ask it again, what power with global influence arose around 1798, in a location away from the warring nations, with two elements of strength (identified in verses 15 to 17 as political and religious), which at first appear gentle, but would turn oppressive? Only one power on earth meets these specifications.

According to prophecy, it must be a ruling power possessing enormous worldwide influence and might. Here Protestant America stands unchallenged.

9. DRAWS THE WORLD INTO A FALSE WORSHIP MOVEMENT

“And he **doeth great wonders**, so that he **maketh fire come down** from heaven in the sight of men. And **deceiveth** them that dwell on the earth by the means of those **miracles** which he had power to do in the sight of the beast.” (Rev.13:13,14)

If we have identified this earth beast correctly, then Protestant America will deceive the inhabitants of the earth through miracles, as it tries to get them to make an “image to the beast”. (vv.13,14) These miracles emanate from the spirits of devils. (Compare Revelation 16: 13, 14; Matthew 24:24; 1 Timothy 4:1).

This suggests that American Protestantism **will lead a great counterfeit religious revival** in which the false “**Pentecostal**” **fire of spiritualism** is to play a prominent role. If you are up to date on religious developments, you may be aware that this is already occurring.

One is reminded of a recent inter-church convention whose banner screamed out, “SIGNS AND WONDERS”. The focus on occultic practices with signs and wonders is exploding through American Protestantism, forging a unification of churches.

BIRTHPLACE OF SPIRITISM

And can you guess where modern spiritism had its origin? In the USA. Beginning in Hydesville, New York, in the family of John D. Fox in the latter part of March, 1848, it spread with incredible rapidity through all the world.

There are four clues in this prophecy that the second beast will **counterfeit the work of the Holy Spirit**. Here are two of the clues:

1. As the true Holy Spirit brought down the “fire” of Pentecost, so will the second beast bring down counterfeit heavenly “fire” in a false spiritual revival.
2. Just as the Holy Spirit acts on Jesus’ authority and glorifies Jesus alone (John 16:13-14), so will the second beast act on the first beast’s authority and cause the world to worship the first beast alone. (Rev.13:12,14)

FOR FURTHER INFORMATION

You will find the other clues in Appendix B on pages 220 to 222. You may also care to refresh your mind on the details concerning the “fire” on pages 109 to 111.

10. WILL FORM A LIAISON WITH THE FIRST BEAST

“And he **exerciseth all the power of the first beast** before him, and **causeth the earth** and them that dwell therein **to worship [obey] the first beast...** he had **power to do in the sight of the beast.**”
(Rev.13:12,14)

It will form a liaison with the first power whose deadly wound was healed, exercising ALL the authority of the first wild beast in its sight.
(vv.12,14)

The second beast, representing world-wide organized apostate Protestantism, comes into complete collusion with the first wild beast – Romanism.

An “unlikely” prophecy

May I state that the identification of the earth beast as Protestant America was not made by watching current events and trying to make them fit a prophecy.

Be clear on this. The identification was made 150 years ago – BEFORE current events confirmed it. In fact, when the identification was made, current events were so unlikely, the identification might have been considered ridiculous. Just 150 years ago, it would seem impossible that such a partnership could ever occur.

At that time,

- (a) America was not a world power.
- (b) Rome, having received its deadly wound, was pitifully weak.
- (c) America was vocally Protestant.
- (d) Catholic Rome was vocally anti-America.

That’s right. Protestant America and Romanism were OPPOSITES.

The Declaration of Independence, which was the pillar on which Protestant America was founded, was described by the Papacy at the time as a “Satanic document” and a document of “wickedness”. The First Amendment of the US Constitution, which guaranteed personal religious freedom, was anathema to the Vatican.

The Roman Catholic Council of Trent had been convened to fight the Protestant Reformation. In the 4th Session, the Jesuits (the “soldiers” of the Roman system) condemned freedom of speech, freedom of the press, and freedom of conscience. They were emphatic that no man has the right to choose his own religion; no man has the right to publish what he feels is the truth; and no man has the right to freedom of conscience.

This was totally opposite from the principles of Protestant America.

Yet some Bible scholars studying this prophecy came to the conclusion that one day

- (a) American Protestantism would stretch hands across the gulf to the Roman papacy, and that
 - (b) both would rise to the top in world events, and that
- I this would begin the countdown of final events.

How could this unlikely liaison be achieved?

It would take another 100 years for this to be seen.

Vatican and US alliance brings down Communism

The first public news of the developing liaison was in the 1990s, when *Time* magazine announced on its front cover: “HOLY ALLIANCE. How Reagan and the Pope conspired to assist Poland’s Solidarity movement and hasten the demise of Communism.”

The Two Powers of Revelation 13 had at last begun to act out their end time destiny together.

US-Vatican secret alliance exposed

In 2007, high level mobster Tony Gambino, 63, of the infamous Gambino New York crime family and grandson of Lucky Luciano, just released after 20 years in prison, and with nothing to lose, set the record straight about the **United States-Vatican secret alliance**.

Making a guest appearance on September 25 on Greg Szymanski’s radio show, *The Investigative Journal on Liberty Radio* at www.libertyradio.live.com he talked about his first hand knowledge of the alliance – and of George Bush, the pope and other high level Jesuits’ complicity and knowledge of 9/11.

“I know for a fact,” he said, “Bush, the Pope and other top Vatican and U.S. government leaders had prior knowledge and helped organize 9/11. They did it for many obvious reasons, one being instigating the war in Iraq. But they also did it to get their hands on all the gold that was hidden below in the Twin Towers.

“My grandfather’s construction company built the Twin Towers and after it was completed, I know they went in and put in big underground vaults to house an enormous amount of gold which is now **in Bush’s and Vatican hands** in order to fund the war.”

The high-level former mobster talked openly for an hour, indicting top Vatican and US government officials with complicity in high crimes, treason and assassinations as they **worked together “like a tight-knit happy family”** with the Gambino and other Mafia families. (The entire interview can be heard at www.arcticbeacon.com as well as Liberty Radio.)

Romanism and Protestant America working together “like a tight-knit happy family.” Did you get that?

Is it becoming apparent that Protestant America just might be fulfilling this prophecy, after all?

11. IS SUBORDINATE TO AND UNDER THE DIRECTION OF THE FIRST BEAST

“And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast BEFORE HIM... **in the sight of the beast.**” (Rev.13:12.14)

As we saw earlier (see pages 103 to 105), the second beast does these works on behalf of the first beast, **IN THE PRESENCE OF** the first beast.

The subordinate works in **THE SIGHT OF** his superior, not the other way around.

The expression “in his sight” means that **the second beast is subordinate to and under the direction of the first beast.** It speaks what the first beast tells it to speak. It does the dirty work of the first beast, who controls it from the shadows. This second beast is out in front but is being controlled from behind the scenes by the first beast.

The second beast is strictly subordinate to the first beast. Its mission is not to exalt itself or to demand worship for itself, but solely to make sure that the earth’s inhabitants worship the first beast (vv. 14-15).

Is Protestant America beginning to do this?

How Rome has brought Protestant America into subordination

When America was established as a safe haven for persecuted Christians, Rome eyed this growing champion of Protestantism, this new, free enterprise ...and realised that to protect her own plans for world domination she must either neutralise it or gain control.

It was decided to “work... to make America Catholic... and our hearts shall leap toward it with crusader enthusiasm.” (Bishop Ireland, Baltimore Catholic Council, 1890)

War was seen as one way to achieve this.

The rise of Roman Catholic Adolf Hitler was a key move in the Vatican’s plan for world domination.

Hitler patterned his SS on Rome’s Jesuits.

Hitler’s Nazi forces blitzed north, west, east and south across the plains of Europe, pillaging towns and cities, erecting death camps, raping young girls, tossing infants into the air and shooting them, slashing unborn babies from their screaming mothers, and gassing and machine-gunning millions of men, women and children.

Hitler’s war had the approval of Pope Pius XII. This was an imperialistic, German-led, Catholic European empire. The plan was to first subdue Europe and Russia, then attack America simultaneously from east and west.

But, in 1945, Hitler failed. Germany lost a war for the second time in a generation.

Both times, the balance of power had been tilted against Germany by the growing economic and military might of Protestant America.

So the Nazis went underground, regrouped and vowed to make America their number one target. Planning began in earnest to infiltrate American institutions of power and control them. This included infiltration of the American military and intelligence community to the point where they could become Vatican assets.

This was not hard to do. Post-1945, in the face of a communist Eastern Europe, the US was desperate for intelligence on Russia and Eastern Bloc populations. And the German SS (patterned on the Jesuits) had the files. Deals were done, and SS intelligence staff went to Washington, complete with their files, their philosophies, and their experience.

It is no secret that Rome's Knights of Malta, using Allen Dulles as their point man, established the CIA.

The Jesuits brought in all of their top Nazi SS soldiers into the CIA.

Now, the CIA was composed of the ex-Nazi SS. The CIA now was the intelligence arm of the Vatican. The Catholic Knights of Malta were throughout – men like Casey and Angleton. Angleton manned the “Vatican desk”, a desk within the CIA that has a direct link to the Vatican.

There are many today in the lower ranks of the CIA who sense something is not right, but they can't put their finger on it. If only they knew, the CIA is just an arm of the Jesuit Order and Knights of Malta, carrying out the papacy's long term plan. Maybe some of them will REVOLT, and start to tell the truth themselves.

NSA, the National Security Agency, has, on its emblem, the crossed papal keys of St. Peter.

How much Rome already controls

It has been truly said, “Give me control of a nation's money, and I care not who makes her laws.” (Rothschild)

GOBBLES UP THE FINANCIAL WORLD

On the financial front, Rome is winning hands down. It was Rome's Jesuits who, in the largest Protestant country on earth, successfully

established the Federal Reserve Bank – which is not part of the US government, but privately owned. It was secretly created by the Jesuits, using proxies as a front. And it has the power to print the American national money supply.

During the financial meltdown of September, 2008, the Federal Reserve gave a \$85 billion loan to American International Group (AIG), the ***WORLD'S LARGEST financial conglomerate***, in exchange for a nearly 80 percent stake in the firm. (John Tiffany, *AmericanFreePress.net*)

The Bank of America is also owned by the Jesuits. During the same meltdown, it bought Merrill Lynch, a deal which gave it the world's largest brokerage and a sizable investment bank. (*Wall Street Journal*, September 15, 2008)

Thus the financial collapse has strengthened Rome's financial base.

SKULL AND BONES

The president of the USA is a member of the Order of Skull and Bones, an order secretly controlled by Rome, which “centers its program around ideas of death, power, and devotion to a goddess.” (*U.S. News and World Report*, October 16, 2007)

In the Skull and Bones initiation ceremony, they bow down to one **wearing papal vestments** and swear allegiance.

CONTROL OF ALL SPHERES

And the plan advances further... By 1994, in the USA – a Protestant land –with Catholics comprising only 26 percent of the population, the majority of people in power were now Roman Catholic:

- Congress: majority Roman Catholic
- President's Cabinet: majority Roman Catholic
- Members of the Pentagon: majority Roman Catholic
- Supreme Court: majority Roman Catholic

Every U.S. lawyer is now taught at a Jesuit-run law school or by Jesuit-trained teachers.

There is now a gradual Catholicisation of the US Supreme Court. In April, 1990, in a landmark decision, judges of the Supreme Court, for the first time in its 200 years, abandoned the principle of the English

Common Law upon which American justice was based. They set a precedent for the USA to apply the principles of Roman Canon Law.

Rome's agents are right through the government, the media, and right through the churches.

“Former Bush speechwriter Michael Gerson, another evangelical with an affinity for Catholic teaching, says that **the key to understanding Bush's domestic policy is to view it through the lens of Rome.**” (www.catholic.org/national/national_story.php?id=28230 – June 14, 2008)

Under the title “*Vatican Moves For Total US Takeover With Obama Vice President Pick*”, an intelligence report from the Council of Bishops, Russian Orthodox Church Outside Russia, was emailed to me. It drew attention to the fact that Barak Obama's Vice Presidential choice Joseph Biden, is of Irish Catholic ancestry and educated at Archmere Academy, one of the most prestigious, and secretive schools of the Catholic Norbertine Order. Biden has full control of the United States Senate's Foreign Relations Committee which is composed entirely of Roman Catholics.

It is important to note that Archmere Academy was founded by, and was the original home of, the Catholic American Industrialist John Jakob Raskob, who joined the right-wing coup (known as the Business Plot) attempt with Prescott Bush, George Bush's grandfather, against President Franklin Delano Roosevelt in an attempt to install a fascist dictatorship upon the American people.

This attempt to overthrow the government of the United States in a military coup was thwarted by the testimony of World War I hero General Smedley Darlington Butler (known as the ‘Fighting Quaker’) before the House Un-American Activities Committee, which though supporting his claims failed to take any action against the conspirators.

Now the conspirators have risen, not by force of arms this time, but by being elected by the very people they seek to subjugate!

Even more disturbing about these events is that the current Roman Catholic Pope, Benedict XVI, and defacto ruler of Senator Biden and other members of America's political elite, has made no secret of his past ties to the German Nazis by his being a past member of the Hitler Youth Organization during World War II.

12. IT BECOMES AN EXACT LIKENESS TO ROME'S SYSTEM

‘...saying ...that they should make an image to the [first] beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live.’ (Rev.13:14)

Meaning of “image”

You will notice that in forming “an image to the beast” (v.14), the **purpose** of the image is **to honour the first beast**.

The first mention of the word “image” in the Bible is in Genesis 1:26 – “And God said, Let us make man in our **image**, after our **likeness**.” Here the word “image” is defined as “likeness”. We have already noted a biblical principle that the first occurrence of a word in the Bible generally helps us in fixing the meaning of a word.

When one makes an image “to” or “of” something, one becomes **an exact likeness** of that other one. Jesus is described as the “express image” of God, because He exhibited the exact character of the Father.

In forming an image to the first beast, the second beast becomes a perfect likeness in character to that first beast.

The passion to subdue America

When the Protestant Reformation (from study of the Bible prophecies) identified the papacy as the “man of sin”, half of Europe broke away from Rome. The Vatican reeled under the onslaught. The papal camp was aghast.

Something had to be done. And so a counter-attack was plotted. In 1541 the Jesuit Society was established. Its mission: (a) to destroy the Protestant movement and (b) gain world control.

The plan to destroy Protestantism included:

- (a) Preterist and Futurist interpretations of prophecy to take the heat off Rome

- (b) introduction of “revised” Bible versions that favoured Rome
- (c) infiltration of Protestant churches, and of governments.

This plan would be extended by the Vatican II Council to include the introduction of charismatic-style celebration worship, with bewitching music and bands, designed to diminish the study of the Bible (which had been the life-blood of Protestantism) and unify the breakaway Protestants into an eventual communion with Rome.

The Jesuits also financed the establishment of the World Council of Churches in 1945.

Nicolini of Rome testifies, “The Jesuits, by their very calling, by the very essence of their institution, are bound to seek, by every means, right or wrong, the destruction of Protestantism. This is the condition of their existence, the duty they must fulfil, or cease to be Jesuits.” (*Footprints of the Jesuits*, 1894)

“Make Protestant America like Rome”

When a Roman Catholic priest stated, “And to hell with the Constitution...” (*The Catholic News*, July 25, 1963), he was only reflecting the sentiments of Pope Leo XIII that “All Catholics should exert their power to cause the Constitutions of states to be modelled after the principles of the Catholic Church.”

But how can this happen, with Roman Catholicism in the US today representing only 26 percent of the population? That can be changed.

And so on June 8, 2007, George Bush made his second visit to the Pope. What did they talk about? Notice what followed soon after. On August 20, President George Bush, Mexican President Vicente Fox, and Canadian Prime Minister Paul Martin met – secretly – to discuss merging the three countries into one. (*Washington Times*, Aug. 20, 2007, by Jon Ward, Ottawa, Canada)

Do you get it? Bring the three together (with Canada 43 percent Catholic and Mexico 90 percent Catholic) and Protestant America will be closer to a takeover.

Enter the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR), with a report entitled *Building A North American Community* – calling for the ending of American sovereignty and the overthrow of the American Constitution and government.

The report demands that by 2010:

- A new currency – the Amero – replace the dollar.
- All borders between the U.S.A., Mexico and Canada be erased.
- The 50 states of the U.S.A. be formally dissolved and the former U.S.A. be divided into 10 weakened administrative regions.

Of course, whether they succeed with that deadline, God alone knows. But that is the aim.

Then on March 13, 2008, for only the fourth time in its 200 year history, the United States House of Representatives (Congress) sat in a closed door session, in which was discussed the “unavoidable” proposed merger of the United States with Canada and Mexico. Although members of Congress were “forbidden” to reveal what was discussed, several were so furious and concerned about the future of the country, they leaked this information. (<http://www.haltturnershow.com>)

Rome’s plan: Protestant America to become an image of Rome

With Rome in the driver’s seat, Protestant America will create an exact likeness of the first beast (Rev.13:15).

The first beast arose as a union of church and state, when Rome used secular government to enforce Sunday observance upon the people. When the first **Sunday laws** were promulgated in the fourth century, most of the Christian world was still observing the Bible Sabbath, Saturday, the seventh day of the week. But the church in Rome united church with state, and by force of arms and the slaughter of millions, got Sunday observance to replace the true Sabbath. This is well-documented history.

The papacy’s plan is for America to do the same – for the religious bodies to join forces and secure government support to enforce their beliefs. When that is achieved, American Protestantism will have created

an “image” of the papal beast.

This plan is already well advanced. The Christian Coalition along with Christian Churches Together and Catholic Campaign for America has developed a ten point agenda for America that they want to implement at the federal and state levels by law. The seventh amendment on their list is a call for a national day of rest, undoubtedly Sunday.

On November 15, 2007, these three religious organizations were involved in a secret meeting at the L'enfant Plaza Hotel in Washington DC. They were joined by a Vatican Cardinal. Nancy Pelosi, Speaker in the U.S. Government House of Representatives, was seen speaking to the Cardinal just before the meeting.

American Government NSA security agents instructed that no one was to take any recording devices or cameras into the meeting, and that nothing was to be released for publication until the Vatican had approved it.

Addressing the group, the Cardinal said that “**America is the second Israel.** We must work with the state legislatures to appropriately help them to understand that all the **immorality and slime** must be stopped and that we must work together in unison to show our Lord that this must be stopped.”

With the “ten amendments” list in his hand, the Cardinal said that “Some of the things that we at the Vatican are concerned about is what is happening here [in America] to the Lord’s day... The people must be told that this day must be kept holy. You must **work together** as leaders of this nation. **As goes this nation, so goes the world.**”

Later, the Christian Coalition issued a communiqué in which it used the same words the Cardinal used at the secret meeting, such as “**immoral slime,**” “**America, the second Israel,**” “We must show our Lord that we will **work together**...” etc. The emphasis of the communiqué was the same as the Cardinal’s emphasis – “Protect the Lord’s Day.”

The evangelicals are taking lessons from Rome as well as instructions. They copy her. They are setting up a mirror image of her. Just watch as Protestant America’s “image” (likeness) to the papacy develops and fulfils prophecy.

In New York on April 20, 2008, Pope Benedict XVI met with certain important political and religious leaders in a large underground assembly

room connected to the Yankee stadium, in which he pursued his agenda for the **enactment of a Sunday law**. He directed the attention of his hearers to his concern that such legislation should meet with his approval.

Rome's and Protestant America's "crusades"

Here is another way this is revealing itself. The mirror image is uncanny.

Protestant America, like its predecessor Catholic Rome, calls for a Crusade against the Muslims.

For hundreds of years Rome waged war against Islam. She called it **the Crusades**. But why? Rome had founded Islam. However, when Islam double-crossed Rome by not handing over Jerusalem, Rome launched the Crusades against Islam.

Now notice. A few days after 9/11, George W. Bush announced the new American purpose as **'This crusade**, this war on terrorism."

"Translated into Arabic for broadcast throughout the Middle East, the word **crusade** was rendered as **war of the cross**..." (Christopher Tyerman, *God's War: A New History of the Crusades*. Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2006, p.72)

What a stunning parallel to Pope Urban II's speech nearly a thousand years earlier, calling for Crusade against Islam! It is as if Rome **handed Bush the script right out of Urban II**.

Parallels

PARALLEL 1: Pope Urban II preached his sermon, calling for Crusade **outside the cathedral** at Clermont. On September 14, 2001, President Bush, surrounded by Billy Graham, a cardinal, a rabbi, and an imam, as well as four previous presidents and many members of Congress, delivered a sermon **inside the National Cathedral, calling for war to "rid the world of evil."**

A coincidence? I don't think so. History is now repeating itself, with the Image of the Beast functioning as Rome's cat paw.

Truly the **image** of the beast is replicating the **beast** itself.

PARALLEL 2: The Crusades consolidated the papacy's leadership role in Europe. And just as George W. Bush declared, '**You're either with us or against us,**' the first warrior pope, Gregory VII, said, '**Anyone who is not in accord with** the Roman church should not be regarded as a Catholic.'" (Roman Catholic author John Carroll, *Crusade*, p.282)

PARALLEL 3: The very military/religious order that helped conduct the Crusades for Rome is **the very same** military/religious order that created and runs the CIA – the Knights of Malta.

Completing of the image to Rome

Protestantism will form "an image to the beast" when it reaches its hand across the gulf to join with the papacy to combine church and state, thereby bringing persecution on anyone who refuses to worship as Rome demands.

The State will then enforce the religious beliefs of that first beast on the entire population.

Revelation 13 describes the rise and development of the Image of the Beast, imposed on the most powerful nation in the history of the world, America.

How true is this once unlikely prediction now beginning to look: "When the leading churches of the United States, uniting upon such points of doctrine as are held by them in common, shall influence the state to enforce their decrees and to sustain their institutions, then Protestant America will have formed an image of the Roman hierarchy, and the infliction of civil penalties upon dissenters will inevitably result." (E.G. White, *The Great Controversy*, p. 445)

THE IMAGE FORMING

PAPAL ROME

Nominally Christian

Practises Roman Canon Law

Holy Crusade against Islam
- launched from a cathedral
- run by Knights of Malta

Cardinal's speech: "America is the second Israel. We must work with the state legislatures to appropriately help them to understand that all the **immorality and slime** must be stopped and that we must **work together** in unison to show our Lord that this must be stopped."

Initiated Sunday laws thru' the state

PROTESTANT AMERICA

Nominally Christian

Switching to Roman Canon Law

Holy Crusade against Islam
- launched from a cathedral
- run by Knights of Malta

Christian Coalition communiqué:
"America, the second Israel,"
"immoral slime," "We must show our Lord that we will **work together**..." Protect the Lord's day."

Planning Sunday laws thru' the state

1. PROMOTES THE FIRST BEAST OVER ITSELF

"He causeth [everyone] to worship the first beast." (Rev.13:12).

Worship goes to the first beast, not to the second beast.

This second beast does not demand worship for itself, but is **the promoter and agent of the first beast** – the beast from the sea. (Rev.13:12) It is the FIRST beast's cheerleader: "Worship the first beast... Worship the first beast... Worship the first beast!"

It sets out to "make an image **to the beast**" (v.14) - The purpose of the image is to honour the first beast.

There is nothing in Rev. 13, nor elsewhere, to show that this second beast is worshipped, but rather that it directs worship away from itself, to the first beast.

After his election as President of the USA in 2000, George Bush declared:

“The best way to honour Pope John Paul II... is to listen to his words and put his words and teachings into action here in America. This is a challenge we must accept.”(March 22, 2001) Could that mean “*obey*”?

“In 1960, John Kennedy went from Washington to Texas to assure Protestant preachers that he would not obey the pope. In 2001, George Bush came from Texas up to Washington to assure a group of Catholic bishops that he would.” (*Washington Post*, April 15, 2001)

On April 11, 2008, during an interview with Eternal Word Television Network (EWTN) anchor Raymond Arroyo asked George Bush, “When you look into [Pope] Benedict XVI’s eyes what do you see?”

And Bush answered immediately, “**God.**” (*ZENIT.org News Agency*, April 14, 2008)

When the pope arrived in the United States four days later, Bush personally went to the airport to receive the pope, **a courtesy** he had **never extended to any visiting leader.**

Russian Intelligence reports to the Foreign Ministry stated that during that visit to the United States by Pope Benedict XVI, both the American President, George Bush, and Britain’s Prime Minister, Gordon Brown, knelt before the Roman Pontiff and ‘swore their allegiance’ to the New Holy Roman Empire. (*Sorcha Faal*, April 23, 2008 –<http://www.whatdoesitmean.com/index1094.htm>)

As early as February 24, 1992, *Time* magazine noted that on a number of matters “***American policy was changed as a result of the Vatican’s not agreeing with our policy.***”

Is Protestant America fulfilling this prophecy – to honour the first beast? You be the judge.

14. RECEIVES ITS POWER AND AUTHORITY FROM THE FIRST BEAST

“And he exercises all the authority belonging to the first beast, in his presence.” (Rev.13:12)

We have already seen how Scripture reveals the descending rank, but it is appropriate to repeat this here briefly.

* Notice this **descending grade of rank**:

(a) FROM DRAGON TO FIRST BEAST: The DRAGON gives his power to the FIRST BEAST: “And the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.” (Rev.13:2)

(b) FROM FIRST BEAST TO SECOND BEAST: In turn, the second beast is empowered by the first beast: “And he exerciseth all the **power of the first beast.**” (v.12)

Whose power does that first beast exercise? ANSWER: The dragon’s power.

Whose power does the second beast exercise? ANSWER: The first beast’s power. “And he exerciseth all the **power of the first beast.**” (v.12)

So the FIRST BEAST gives ITS power to the SECOND BEAST. The first beast possesses certain power, which the second beast will exercise (use).

DRAGON gives power >>> FIRST BEAST gives power >>> SECOND BEAST

The first beast is in charge, and the second beast does its dirty work.

It is not his (the second beast’s) own power, but the first beast’s power, that makes his work successful.

We see this process being enacted today in Protestant America’s (or should we say “Vatican America’s”?) foreign and domestic policy.

15. WILL SPEAK AS A DRAGON

It will speak as a dragon (Rev.13:11).

A system “speaks,” or expresses itself, through its laws. This prophecy predicts a change in the earlier peaceful scene.

The beast with lamb-like horns speaks with the voice of a dragon, and “exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him.” The earth beast will enact laws that will support the resurrected first beast, the papacy, and in so doing it will manifest the very spirit of a dragon. The spirit of persecution manifested by paganism and the papacy is again to be revealed.

The dragon gave the first beast (the papacy) its power. The second beast will enact laws which are of the same spirit.

Rome hates Protestant American freedom

After Protestant America declared itself free, many in Catholic South America carried medallions inscribed with the words “American Liberty”. The government of Madrid, on the Vatican’s advice, issued a decree making it a crime to possess them. The Inquisition was put to work to stamp out such “heretical ideas”. In Brazil, the Constitution of the U.S.A. was put on the prohibited reading list.” (Avro Manhattan, *Vatican Imperialism in the Twentieth Century*. Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 1965, p.141)

Now Rome, having infiltrated Protestant American churches and government, is planning to remodel the Constitution and the laws of Protestant America and **abolish religious freedom:**

* “And to hell with the Constitution...” (A priest in *The Catholic News*, July 25, 1963)

* “But Constitutions can be changed, and non-Catholic sects may decline to such a point that the political proscription [ban] of them may become feasible and expedient. **What protection would they have against a Catholic state?**” (Miller and Ryan, *The State and the Church*, pp.38,39, imprimatur of Cardinal Hayes)

* “They [Catholics] must penetrate wherever possible in the administration of civil affairs...all Catholics should exert their power to cause the Constitutions of states to be modelled after the principles of the Catholic Church.” (Encyclical of Pope Leo XIII)

* “The church has the right to require that the Catholic religion shall be the only religion of the State, to the exclusion of all others.” (Pope Pius IX)

* “The Roman Catholic Church must demand the right to **freedom for herself alone.**” (Jesuit publication, *La Civiltà Cattolica*, pg 82-86)

* “All forms of Protestantism are unjustified. They should not exist.” (Catholic periodical *America*, Jan 4, 1941, vol.64, pg 343)

Will abolish freedom in America

* “Religious liberty is merely endured until the opposite can be carried into effect without peril to the Catholic world.” (R.C. Bishop O’Connor of Pittsburg)

* “Cursed be those who assert liberty of conscience and of worship and such that maintain that the church may not employ force.” (Pope Pius IX)

* Revolutionary War hero General Lafayette was born a Romanist. He said: “If the liberties of the American people are ever destroyed, they will fall by the hands of the Romish [Catholic] clergy.” (*Confession of a French Catholic Priest*, title page – in ‘*America or Rome, Which?*’. John T. Christian, 1895, p. 61)

* “If Catholics ever gain a significant numerical majority in this country, religious freedom is at an end. So our enemies say, so we believe.” (*The Shepherd of the Valley*, journal of the late Bishop of St. Louis, November 23, 1851 – cited in *Twice Confounded*)

* The Archbishop of St. Louis admitted: “**Heresy and unbelief are crimes**; and in Christian countries, as in Italy and Spain, for instance, where all people are Catholics, and where the Catholic religion is an essential part of the law of the land, they are **punished as crimes.**” “Every cardinal, archbishop, and bishop in the Catholic church takes an oath of allegiance to the pope, in which occur the following words, ‘

Heretics, schismatics, and rebels to our said lord [the pope], or his aforesaid successors, **I will to my utmost persecute and oppose.**" (Josiah Strong, *Our Country*, ch.5, para.2-4)

When the second beast becomes like the first beast, the Inquisition will begin again.

Who was behind 9/11?

If you want to know who was behind 9/11, see Appendix A at the end of this report.

Always, *always*, remember that: (a) Rome hates the US Constitution; (b) Rome's militant orders are geared up for infiltration and control; and (c) Rome possesses the finest intelligence in the world – *bar none*.

And just as Rome has always done in the past, she will get someone else to do her dirty work *so that she can still come off as the "moral authority" on earth*.

This once peaceful Protestant America is well on the way to "speaking **AS A DRAGON**." (Rev.13:11) Now, are you awake? Did you catch this media report?: "Prime Minister Putin has declared to the French Government that the United States has become **A FRIGHTENING MONSTER**". (<http://www.whatdoesitmean.com/index 1105.htm> – June 4, 2008)

Prophecy says: "AS A DRAGON"; modern comment says: "A MONSTER". **Bible prophecy picks the right words. Then history fulfils them!** Don't you think that's something wonderful about Bible prophecy? Even uncanny?

16. BECOMES A WORLD POLICEMAN

OBJECTION: It's hard to imagine the US forcing Sunday laws on Russia, Iran, Japan and many other countries. Look at how difficult it is for the US to control even just Israel. Isn't it more logical that 'a god' (e.g. Satan) can make this happen, fully? Remember, **ALL** the world obeys this beast.

ANSWER: That is a fair comment, which deserves to be addressed. Three factors provide us with the answer:

1. A global disaster
2. The Vatican's power used
3. Aided by economic sanctions

We shall address these in turn.

(a) After a global disaster

The universal Sunday law will come **AFTER *an horrendous global disaster***. In the face of a common threat, and with fear raging, even the worst of enemies are willing to work together.

It was David Rockefeller, the powerful leader of the CFR, who said, "All we need is the right major crisis, and the nations will accept the New World Order."

(b) The Vatican's power will be used

America's directive to the world will be ***empowered by the Vatican***, which has infiltrated high positions in all nations. The prophecy says that the second beast "exerciseth all the **power of the first beast**." (Rev.13:12) There's the key – Rome.

ITS POWER COMES FROM ROME

"He exerciseth all the **power of the first beast**." The power belongs to the

first beast – and the second beast uses it. The first beast is in charge, and the second beast does its dirty work.

The second beast is empowered and authorized by the first beast. It is not his (the second beast's) own power, but the first beast's power, that makes his work successful worldwide.

Rome is achieving her aim to control all spheres of life.

* “The main underlying Roman Catholic purpose is **to infiltrate, and penetrate all areas of life, where the Roman Catholic Church can have control with excess in a One World Government...** This has been in preparation since the formation of the Jesuit order in 1541 to infiltrate absolutely every area of society so as to take over the world politically and religiously. The two main doctrines of Catholicism that define this are... The doctrine of the Apostolic succession, which is actually the Papacy. And the doctrine of temporal power which is secular government.” (Alberto Rivera, Jesuit priest defector)

* A noted English historian reminds us that: “**No political event or circumstance can be evaluated without the knowledge of the Vatican's part in it. And no significant world situation exists in which the Vatican does not play an important explicit or implicit role.**” (Avro Manhattan, English historian, 1960 *The Vatican And World Politics*)

ROME CONTROLS ALL NATIONS AND MAJOR INSTITUTIONS

So why would Russia, Iran, Israel, China follow? Because Rome's Jesuits sit at the highest government levels of those countries.

Rome's Jesuits have infiltrated or control:

- * Government
- * Judiciary
- * Military
- * Universities
- * Drug industry
- * Secret societies
- * Jewish organizations
- * Moslem leadership

They have successfully infiltrated or control ALL KEY ORGANIZATIONS.

The Supreme Jesuit General is

“in command of

- * the Sovereign Military Order of Malta,
- * Scottish-Rite Shriner Freemasonry,
- * The Knights of Columbus,
- * B’nai B’rith [Jewish Masonry],
- * The Nation of Islam,
- * The Mafia,
- * Opus Dei, and the
- * Ku Klux Klan,
- * along with a host of lesser
Brotherhoods.”

(*Saturday Evening Post*, Jan. 17, 1959)

The CIA was built by the Roman Catholic Knights of Malta. It matters not whether it’s the Mafia, CIA, FBI, KGB, FEMA, Freemasonry, Mossad, German BND, the British SIS, or MI6, the top is infested with Jesuits.

The Vatican also controls all of the drug trade — all of the heroin, all of the opium, all of the cocaine, everything going around in Colombia. Colombia has a concordat with the papacy. Rome controls most major pharmaceutical companies in the world. (See the prophecy that this would occur: “By thy *sorceries* [from Greek “*pharmakeia*” = *medicine*, *pharmacies*] were all nations deceived.” (Rev.18:23)

Meanwhile, Protestantism has lost its former Bible-based power. Protestantism of today is an empty shell, it is nothing. Protestant American foreign policy of today is the Roman Catholic Council of Trent policy. That is what went on in Serbia and Bosnia. It’s the Council of Trent – the Jesuits used the American Air Force to bomb those Orthodox people who would not submit to the papacy.

Don’t be hoodwinked by apparent hostility between world powers. Rome is in control. Although some nations may hate America, yet when it comes to the things Rome wants done, they will follow.

Someone says, But is it really Rome? Aren’t the Zionists the ones really in control? Haven’t they infiltrated the Vatican?

Don't be fuzzed by the smokescreen. The Jesuits want the Jews to take the blame.

They always put Jews in the forefront—so that they can blame all of what they do on the Jewish race, to create an anti-Semitism everywhere. Jewish “pawns” who are loyal to the pope and the Jesuits are doing this – to create hatred of Bible believing Jews. (See Appendix C – “*THE JESUITS AND PROTOCOLS OF ZION*”.)

In Russia

Unless you have an in-depth knowledge of world history, you will find it difficult to connect all the dots.

The **Catholic Jesuit** organization was behind World War I... World War II... The Korean War... and the Vietnam War.

The *Jesuit Oath* is similar to the *Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*. The Jesuits obviously wrote the *Protocols* because they have carried out every protocol in that little handbook. They have carried everything out. ALWAYS the *Protocols* further the agenda of the Jesuit Order. The Jesuits' hand is all over the *Protocols*.

Who introduced Communism in 1848? None other than the **Jesuits**. They trained Karl Marx, the Jewish Front Name, concerning the tenets of communism and set him loose. That is the Jesuit way. They tutored him in the British Museum, according to Alberto Rivera, an ex-Jesuit. The Jesuits tutored **Karl Marx** for nearly 30 years.

Lenin was trained by the **Jesuit Order** in Geneva Switzerland. It was Diego Bergen (Germany's ambassador to the Vatican during Germany's Weimar Republic and during Hitler's Nazi Germany) who provided transport for Lenin into Russia via the **Vatican's Sealed Train**.

Josef Stalin was trained by the **Jesuit Order** inside the Orthodox Seminary in Tiflis, Georgia, Russia. Together with Stalin was Cardinal Agagianian.

Congressman Louis McFadden, in a speech in the U.S. Congress revealed that it was the **Jesuit-established Federal Reserve Bank** of America that **financed the communist revolution in Russia**. (G. Edward Griffin, *The Creature from Jekyll Island*, American Opinion Publishing, p. 209)

They financed **Trotsky's** passage from New York to Russia so that he might assist in the destruction of the Russian Empire. The aim: to ravage the Russian Orthodox church, which refused to recognise the pope.

After Congressman McFadden publicly exposed these facts, there were many attempts on his life. Ultimately he died due to poison, the "Jesuit's Poison Cup".

After the Bolsheviks took over and killed the Russian Orthodox leaders, purged Russia of Protestants, and set up the gulag system, the **Jesuits** behind it all could openly invite the Jesuits to take over.

The **Jesuits** were given formal re-entry into Russia in 1922, after the Bolshevik Revolution and Civil War.

The Russian College was erected in **Rome** in 1929, so they could prepare Russian **Jesuits** to rule Russia.

The Jesuits honeycombed the Russian and Eastern Orthodox churches, until they knew it was time to strike in Eastern Europe, until they knew that enough Orthodox bishops were ready to accept the primacy of the pope. And then, when they knew they had this support... Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! The Communist countries were all brought to their knees.

The **Jesuit General** rules through the **KGB**, just like they rule America through the CIA and the FBI. (The KGB is now called the FSB and SVR.)

There are few organizations today with better experience in handling dissent than the KGB – and now, a **KGB controlled by the Vatican**.

Don't believe the surface contradiction that you appear to see. Things are not as they appear.

Rome controls America. Rome controls Russia. And at the right time, when Rome uses America to speak to Russia, Russia will obey.

Israel

What about Israel?

Before World War II, a Jewish satanist group (the Shabbataians) had already done a trade-off with Hitler, which resulted in 50,000 indoctrinated German Jews – their own followers – escaping to Palestine from 1933 to 1939.

The rest – biblical Jews and others – were to be left in Europe at Hitler's mercy. When the war ended, the plan was launched to attract survivors of the holocaust to the Shabbataian Zionist state of Israel – into one easy location for an eventual final holocaust.

So it was that after Hitler's mass extermination of both Jews and Bible Christians, numerous Jews sought a new life in a promised land of safety.

Many of these were Bible-loving Torah Jews who believed they could now worship God in safety.

But they did not know about the men in the shadows and the real reason this Jewish State had been set up.

Are you ready for this? Please listen carefully to what follows.

Jewish Zionism “positively isn't a Jewish conspiracy, but **strictly Roman Catholic**, who have strategically used certain Jews for their cause's advantage.” (Barry Chamish, *Shabtai Tzvi, Labor Zionism and the Holocaust*, p. 104)

For years Jewish families poured in, building new settlements.

Then in 1988 things in Israel began to change. “The planned disintegration of Israel began in 1988.... and Shimon Peres was the agent.” (*Ibid.*, p. 131)

Israel's president **Shimon Peres** was educated by **Jesuits** in Poland. He is the highest ranking **Jesuit operative** in Israel. “...and his task is spreading chaos ending with national destruction. The destruction of the Jews is a primary goal of the Jesuits.” (*Ibid.*, p. 103)

The Jesuit operatives took control of both the Israeli government and the military (IDF). It was the **Jesuits**, through their Zionist front men, who **now ran Israel**.

There was hatched a very shrewd plan. Military outposts were established close to the new Jewish settlements “to protect them”.

Now watch what happens. The story of the new Israeli settlement of Netzarim is typical.

It was standard procedure that no soldier was allowed to be in their barracks unarmed. But on a certain day three young Israeli soldiers (two girls and an 18 year old boy) were disarmed by their military superior and left helpless. It was done to make certain they couldn't defend themselves.

Then a so-called "terrorist" came into the base and shot those three young soldiers dead.

Then came the immediate calls to disband Netzarim "because it's too dangerous for our soldiers to serve there."

That was Stage One of the plan to destroy the settlements. Netzarim was demolished. The same plan was to be activated throughout Israel. Their strategy: to systematically slice off portions of Israel until Israel becomes impossible to defend.

"Peres was going to be the instrument of a withdrawal to the '48 lines and he was **shuttling between the Washington Institute and the Vatican**...the plan... Israel becomes indefensible, the foreign troops patrol the country, the Vatican gets Jerusalem." (*Ibid.*, p. 143) The only way to achieve this "is to aggravate the conflict into an unsolvable bloodbath..." (p. 131)

A holocaust is planned to eliminate multitudes of both Jews and Moslems. Jewish Zionism, run by **Jesuits** through its operatives in Israel, aims for the destruction of the Jews.

Who is running Israel? Instead of Jews, read **Jesuits**.

This will pave the way for the **Vatican** to take Jerusalem. In this plan, Jerusalem itself will be spared. "And he shall plant the tabernacles of his palace between the seas [the Dead Sea and the Mediterranean], in the glorious holy mountain [Jerusalem]." (*Daniel 11:45*)

An agreement for this to occur has already been made – between Israel's Zionist [Jesuit-backed] leaders and the **Vatican**. (See the report in my book *Ark of the Covenant*, pp. 473,505)

As we noted, the state of Israel was set up by the High Masonic Rothschild-controlled Shabbataian Jews. Rothschild has had an alliance with the **Jesuit General** since 1876, with Adam Weishaupt. These are the same people who betrayed the Jews into the hands of the Nazis, killing many Jews all throughout Europe, betraying their own Jewish people. These are the very same powers who run the nation of Israel today.

Rome controls the Israeli government. It controls the Israeli government through the Mossad with some recent CIA help. We have high-level treason and betrayal of the Jewish race. Treason is there in Israel today, by their own leaders, who are loyal to Rome and the Jesuit Order. There's nothing but Knights of Malta, high-level Freemasonry, and the Jesuit Order running all of Israel.

Jesuits control Israel. All that's happening is according to plan.

I shall now address that statement, "Look at how little success the US has had in trying to control the people of one country, i.e. Israel."

The bottom line is this: the interaction you see between America and Israel is part of the game. Rome is directing both parties. When it is in her interests, Rome knows how to play off one against another. But when she wants something done and chooses to use one of them to order it – both will jump to obey.

The power belongs to Rome. As the prophecy says concerning the second beast: The power that "he exerciseth" [uses] is "the power of the first beast [Rome]." (Rev.13:12)

Islam

It may be objected that "You'll never get the Muslims to agree." Don't be so sure. Islam was **founded by the Vatican**. The purpose: To eliminate biblical Christians and Jews in North Africa and the Middle East, then hand over Jerusalem to the Vatican. (Ex-Jesuit Dr Alberto Rivera, *The Prophet*, pp.11-31)

That's why numerous **religious** symbols of Islam are those of the **Roman Catholic Church**. (Walter J. Veith, *The Islamic Connection*, DVD)

The Muslim holy book, *The Koran* was written with the assistance of a Roman **Catholic monk**. It extols Mary. That is why Islam has special

regard for the Virgin Mary. And any “visions” of Mary favoring Rome’s ideas will be highly regarded.

More than that, in certain **Islam countries**, Roman Catholicism is the only officially recognized “Christian” religion. Although in these Muslim countries you can be killed for becoming a Christian, **you can avoid persecution if you become a Roman Catholic**. Ask yourself how, in a strict Muslim land, did that come to be?

The prophecy says **the first beast’s power will be used (“exercised” – Rev.13:12) by the second beast** – and EVEN NOW it is Rome’s power that is being used by the world policeman, Protestant America.

(c) Will be aided by economic sanctions

Bible prophecy informs us that the mark of the beast enforcement will be ***aided by economic sanctions*** – “that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark,” etc. (Rev.13:17) All nations will step into line when **economic pressure** is exerted.

Consider, for example, the Islamic Republic of Pakistan. Of its 170 million people, about 96% are Muslim. They have daily prayers heralded in the streets by loud speakers five times a day. The holy day or day of prayer for Muslims is Friday, not Sunday.

Yet you will find **almost no one open for business on Sunday**. This is a comparatively recent change. But why?

You will be told, “We were falling behind the rest of the world economically. Being closed on a business day when the rest of the world is open for business and then open for business on a day **when the rest of the world is closed**, was hurting our economy too much. So the government made this change, much to the dislike of the religious leaders of this country.”

When no nation can buy or sell unless they agree to the universal Sunday law, all will fall into line.

***ENTRENCHMENT OF ROME INSIDE THE
NATIONS WILL ENSURE THAT THEY OBEY***

You may think you are seeing two opposed sides, but **secretly they are working together**. Notice this instruction to Jesuits from the *Ceremony of Induction and Extreme Oath of The Jesuits*:

“You have been taught... to take sides with the combatants and to act **secretly** in concert with your brother Jesuit who might be engaged on the other side, but **openly** opposed to that with which you might be connected...

***“HE CAUSETH ALL THE WORLD
TO...” (WORLD POLICEMAN)***

According to this prophecy, the **second beast** must be an institution possessing **enormous worldwide influence and power**. Already, America is being regarded globally as World Policeman. In this, Protestant America stands unchallenged. And it will give clout to the first beast.

Through history, Rome’s persecutions were enforced by the governments of the nations she controlled. They always did Rome’s dirty work. (This is also referred to in Daniel’s prophecy: “And arms shall stand on his part.” Dan.11:31)

The first beast does not have the physical armaments to threaten directly, but it does use the second beast as its big stick (as its police for the New World Order) – just as Rome used national armies to do it, right through history.

Yes, the whole world will follow Rome – with Protestant America speaking.

17. IT WILL CALL UPON ALL OTHER NATIONS TO FORM A LIKENESS TO THE PAPAL BEAST

It calls on all the earth to erect an image to the papal beast. "...saying to them that dwell on the earth that **THEY** should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live." (Rev.13:14)

How America will lead the way

Here are the steps in the prophecy:

1. **The earth beast rises with two horns like a lamb.** (Rev.13:11)
2. **The earth beast speaks as a dragon.** (v.13)
3. **It calls on all the earth to erect an image to the papal beast.**
"...saying to them that dwell on the earth that **THEY** should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live." (v.14)
4. **The image of the beast enforces the mark of the beast.** "...that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship [obey] the image of the beast should be killed." (v.15)

Notice carefully Point 3. When America calls on all **other nations** to follow her example, it is **THEY** who push the policies and character of Rome's New World Order **upon their own citizens**. (With Rome now infiltrated into the top echelons of all nations, those nations won't be able to help themselves. They will do anything Rome wants.)

Now notice Point 4. As **all nations** proceed to form an image (likeness) to Rome, **each one of them** then **enforces** the mark of the beast.

America does NOT force Sunday laws onto other nations. First Protestant America leads the way in forming a likeness to Rome – and other nations follow suit. Then those nations – each reflecting the image of Rome – enforce their own Sunday laws. That's what Revelation 13 is telling us.

Archbishop Quigley, in *The Chicago Tribune*, in 1903, is quoted as saying, "When the United States rules the world, the Catholic Church will rule the world."

So says the Revelation 13 prophecy. So says Rome.

The Vatican is well aware that if it is to get Sunday laws passed globally, Rome must first accomplish this in Protestant America. This prerequisite was expressed on November 15, 2007, in Washington DC, by the Vatican Cardinal who addressed the “Sunday law” meeting. He observed, **“As goes this nation [America], so goes the world.”**

So says the prophecy. So says Rome.

18. ALL OTHER NATIONS WILL FOLLOW AMERICA IN FORMING THIS LIKENESS TO ROME BY ENFORCING THE BEAST’S MARK

A power speaks through its laws. This second beast will make laws – laws that the world will agree to, to compel obedience to the first beast.

The prophecy foretells a confederacy of Satan’s forces – the combined political power of the entire world which gives its support to the first beast at the request of the earth beast. This is Satan’s New World order, the uniting of all the world against the Lamb, portrayed in Rev.17:13,14 ; Rev.16:13-16 ; Rev.13:15-18 ; Rev.19:19.

And they “shall make war with the Lamb” in the person of his saints.

The persecutions of Protestants by Romanism, by which the religion of Jesus Christ was almost annihilated, will be more than rivaled when Protestantism and popery are combined.

“And the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings, and they that are with Him are called, and chosen, and faithful.”
(Rev.17:14)

When the powers of darkness set themselves in array against the people of God; when Satan shall muster his forces for the last great conflict, and his power seems to be great and almost overwhelming, God’s people will be delivered.

The emblem (mark) is either in the forehead – the frontal lobes of the brain, where reasoning and moral judgments are made – or in the right hand, where actions take place. It is possible to DO what the New World

Order (NWO) wants without agreeing with it. In that case the mark is in the hand rather than in the forehead. The person ACTS in accord with the NWO, even if he or she doesn't agree intellectually with the NWO.

This is **not** a tattoo, a physical mark. The word "mark" comes from the Greek word "*charagma*", which means character.

The function of the mark of the beast stands in glaring contrast to the seal of God. The basic function of both is to symbolize a religious commitment – to Christ or the antichrist. Both the seal and the mark contain the inherent motifs of ownership and protection. (Ezek 9:4; Rev 7:2,3; 13:16,17; 1 Peter 2:9; Mal 3:17-18)

Just as God places a spiritual mark (seal) "in" the saints' foreheads (seat of one's decision), this being his name (His character), so will the mark of the beast be placed "in" the forehead or "in" the right hand.

19. WILL IMPOSE TRADE SANCTIONS

"And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark..." etc. (Rev.13:17)

A financial embargo will be placed against individuals who refuse to pledge their allegiance to the world government and world religion, just as embargoes are placed against countries that at this present time do not adhere to the demands of the United States.

It is **significant** that of all the hundreds of ruling powers on earth, it was Protestant America **that introduced "sanctions" into global politics.** (As a more recent example one might cite the sanctions against Iran.)
Isn't prophecy stunningly accurate!

But that's not all. The Bible prediction that this world power will impose sanctions on dissenters does not appear so far-fetched when we note the religious mood that has been developing over recent decades within the U.S. Peter Eldersveld, in his radio broadcast, *Back to the Bible*, in March, 1955 (and printed in a pamphlet "Save Our Sunday") expressed it so well:

“Business can easily be put in place, if you Christian people want to put it there... If you would **boycott them**, not only on Sunday but also during the week, **they would have to quit the desecration of the Lord’s day, or go out of business.**”

Dr Buscom Robins, in a lecture titled “The Decalogue”, delivered in Burlington, Kansas, announced:

“There is a class of people in this country who will not keep the Christian Sabbath [Sunday] unless they are forced to do so. But this can easily be done... if we would say **we will not sell anything to them, we will not buy anything from them**, we will not work for them or hire them to work for us, the whole thing could be wiped out, and all the world would keep the Christian Sabbath.”

Do you notice him quoting virtually **the precise wording of Rev.13:17**? Will Protestant America fulfil this prophecy? Nothing is more certain. Just wait and see.

20. WILL IMPOSE A DEATH DECREE

“...and cause that as many as would not worship [obey] the image of the beast should be killed.” (Rev.13:15) This power will put faithful people to death.

US Congress has come up with 32 different offences that warrant the death penalty. Did you know that the USA is **the only Western world power which has an active death penalty** today? This is not without significance. The US is aligned with Nigeria, Iran, Saudi Arabia and Pakistan as the only nations on earth which execute individuals for crimes which they committed while under 18 years of age.

The leaders of false Protestantism will be the ones out in front persecuting Christians and calling for their death!

Cain and Abel both worshipped the SAME God. Abel worshipped God in the way God wanted. Cain worshipped God in his own way, in “man’s way. Cain (the one who worshipped his OWN way) ended up murdering

Abel, who worshipped God in God's way.

This is a prophecy for the end times – NOW! Certain “Christians” who worship God in their OWN way (Sunday worship and other false doctrines) will end up calling for the death of those who worship God in God's way.

CAN'T PROVE PROTESTANT AMERICA FROM THE BIBLE ALONE?

OBJECTION: You can't prove from the Bible alone that the second beast is the USA. You are having to go outside the Bible – which means it can't be conclusive.

ANSWER: It is correct to say you can't get it just from the Bible. And the reason why is this: Prophecy is history **before** it happens. History is prophecy fulfilled.

As time moves forward and history unfolds, prophecy is fulfilled and takes on a clear and focused meaning. Understanding secular history significantly assists in the recognition of prophecy fulfilled. Prophecy is given to enable God's people to know where they are in the stream of time.

The two are to be matched – first of all prophecy, then history. You must match them together to get the answer. That is what Jesus says.

Jesus laid down this principle about prophecy: “Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, you may believe...” (John 13:19) When something comes to pass, that's history. “So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye...” (Luke 21:31)

Prophecy is usually understood at the time of fulfilment.

When events occur, we see history taking place. History is the answer to prophecy. And we need to open our eyes and our hearts to these events.

In Revelation, none of the ruling powers in the prophecies is named. You won't get their names in the Bible.

The Bible doesn't state outright that the first beast is the *Roman Catholic Papacy*. (The word *Papacy* didn't exist when the prophecy was written.)

But the Bible gives us

- the time of its rise,
- the manner of its rise,
- the place of its rise,
- the circumstances of its rise,
- its relationship of interaction with other powers,
- its characteristics as a system,
- and the actions

of this power.

It spells out each of these details with each word so well chosen, and so simply, so un-ambiguously, that no other system on earth can match the requirements, except one.

You can't identify it just from the Bible. It is history that completes the picture for us.

And this identification is spelt out so clearly that even a New Zealand Roman Catholic priest whom I knew (Father Lyons) came straight out and said in these very words, "The book of Revelation is hard on the Mother Church!"

Yes, Papal Rome is fulfilling the prophecy right before our eyes. And it will be fulfilled exactly to the T, just as the symbols pointed out.

The Bible doesn't state outright that the second beast is *Protestant America*. (The word *America* didn't exist when the prophecy was written.)

But the Bible gives us

- the time of its rise,
- the manner of its rise,
- the place of its rise,
- the circumstances of its rise,
- its relationship of interaction with other powers,
- its characteristics as a system,

- its change of nature
 - and the actions
- of this power.

It spells out at least 20 identification points (which we have just seen) – with each Greek word so well chosen, and so simply, so un-ambiguously, that no other system on earth can match the requirements, except one.

God doesn't want us to be mistaken. That is why He has given us so many details.

Yes, Protestant America is fulfilling the prophecy right before our eyes. And it will be fulfilled exactly to the T, just as the symbols pointed out.

You can't identify it just from the Bible. It is *history* that completes the picture for us – just as Jesus said – that subsequent events give us the answer, and this happens, “that, *when it is come to pass*, you may believe...” (John 13:19) When something comes to pass, that's history. “So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye...” (Luke 21:31)

Josephine's surprise

My wife Josephine has a message here.

“When Jonathan returned from an overseas speaking engagement in August last year, he arrived earlier than I expected.

“I had two times in my head, for his return.

“Before he left he told me he was going away for 10 days, leaving on the 18th of August..... He would be back on Thursday about 8.00am..... And that he would be here on the 28th of August.

“I counted 18+10=28 which was a Friday. But he was counting from the 18th inclusive, which meant that he would arrive on the 27th which was a Thursday.

“Well, although I was still ready to meet him (fortunately), he arrived before I expected him.

“When Jonathan actually appeared, it was earlier than I expected. But it would be no use me saying, ‘You **can't** be here, because I'm expecting you tomorrow.’

“Just imagine him saying, ‘**But I AM here, so you have to accept that!**’”

Here's the lesson: We have two theories: Either that the earth beast (the second beast of Revelation 13) is SATAN appearing personally *in the future* – or PROTESTANT AMERICA fulfilling the 20 requirements of prophecy *now*.

When Protestant America actually appears and fulfils perfectly all the prophetic ID points before our own eyes... WHAT THEN?

Do we say, “**You can't be here – America can't be fulfilling the prophecy – because I'm expecting something else in the future**”?

The answer is, “But I AM here!”

Will you object, “No, it can't be, because an individual person, such as Satan, is supposed to be it”?

Jesus says, “when it is come to pass, you may believe...” (John 13:19)
 “So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye...”
 (Luke 21:31)

There is no more time to waste. We're at the brink. I have done all I can to show you. I believe you now have enough evidence. It is time for us all to wash our robes and get ready.

THIS SEEMED IMPOSSIBLE FOR PROTESTANT AMERICA

150 years ago, astute Bible students of Revelation 13 were stating that eventually the two big players on the world scene would be **the Vatican** and **Protestant America**.

When first voiced, this claim concerning Protestant America would seem absurd, for five reasons:

1. America was **not** THE greatest power at that time.
2. The papacy was comparatively weak without the territory it had previously enjoyed.

3. It seemed unlikely that the Protestant United States – the champion of religious and civil freedom – could ever play a central role in Satan’s final attempt to destroy God’s people. **To do this it must undergo a change, a remarkable change... a change of character.**

4. There appeared **no likelihood** that the young, emerging Protestant US would ever rise to **super power status above all other systems**. There was hardly any evidence to support it.

5. It seemed impossible that Protestant America would **coerce the world** to worship the dreaded Roman papal New World Order.

In 1826, Congress established the Monroe Doctrine, by which the European nations were forthrightly told not to bring their wars to the Americas, but to confine them to the continent of Europe. In turn, the US solemnly declared that they would take no part in European conflicts.

While ever the Monroe Doctrine was in effect, **the US could not fulfil this prophecy.**

Today, however, the US has shed every vestige of the Monroe Doctrine and its role as world policeman is plain for all to see.

NOW FULFILLING SO CLEARLY

Okay, are world events now turning these specifications into REALITY? Are they being fulfilled in Protestant America? Is our identification of American Protestantism valid?

YES! One right after the other, the very prophecies given in Revelation 13 are being fulfilled... NOW!

Prophecy is **fulfilling before our eyes**. One would have to be blind not to see it. It is a **physical fact**. ...just as the prophecy foretold.

SUMMARY

You can check this for yourself. Only one institution, power, or system on planet earth matches or is capable of matching all of these 20 specifications.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Not an individual person, but a corporate ruling power, like the first beast. | Matches Rev.13:11 – “ <i>allos</i> ” (another of the same kind) as the first beast “ <i>therion</i> ” (an impersonal ruling power). (See pp.87-97,137) |
| 2. Emerges in the late 1700s. | Matches Rev.13:10,11 – to be rising about the time the first (papal) beast goes into captivity – that is, in the late 1700s. (See pages 133-135,138-141) |
| 3. Arises in a sparsely populated wilderness region, away from the Old World. | Matches Rev.13:11 – away from the turbulent sea of “peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues. Unlike the other ruling systems, to arise in territory previously unoccupied, without overthrowing other powers to establish itself – (See pages 73-87,141-143) |
| 4. Is a young power at that time. | Matches Rev.13:11 – A lamb’s horns have hardly begun to grow - suggests youthfulness. (See pages 101-102,143) |
| 5. Grows up silently, peacefully. | Matches Rev.13:11 – “ <i>anabainon</i> ”, to grow up gently like a plant. (See pages 99-100,144) |
| 6. Emerges with two features of strength. | Matches Rev.13:11 – possessing Two lamb-like horns. Protestant America is the first ruling power in world history to be founded on principles of civil and religious liberty. These are the secrets of US strength.(pp.100,144-146) |
| 7. This changes to oppressive authority in two realms: political/financial (Rev.13:16,17) and religious. (Rev.13:15) | Matches Rev.13:12,14,15,17 – has political power to enforce religious laws. (See page 148) |

- | | |
|--|--|
| 8. Becomes a global super power. | Matches Rev.13:12,14,16 – will exercise enormous worldwide influence and power. Here Protestant America stands unchallenged. (See pages 107,149) |
| 9. Draws the world into a false worship movement. | Matches Rev.13:13,14 – works Deceptive signs and wonders, counterfeiting the fire of the Holy Spirit. (See pp. 109-111,149-150) |
| 10. Forms a liaison with Rome. | Matches Rev.13:12,14 – works on behalf of and in the presence of the first ruling beast system (the papacy). This US-Vatican alliance is well advanced. (See pages 150-153) |
| 11. Is subordinate to and under the direction of the first beast. | Matches Rev.13:12,14 – Already occurring. (See pages 103-105,121-122,153-157) |
| 12. Becomes an exact likeness to the first beast's system. | Increasingly matches Rev.13:14 (See pages 106,158-164) |
| 13. Promotes the first beast over itself. | Matches Rev.13:12,14 – Now Moving in that direction. (See pp. 105-106,164-166) |
| 14. Receives its power and authority from the first beast. | Increasingly matches Rev.13:12 (See pp. 107-109,121-122,166-167) |
| 15. Speaks like a dragon. | Matches Rev.13:11 - A system speaks, or expresses itself, through its laws. It will enact laws of a similar oppressive spirit as the first beast. (See pages 103,119-120,167-169) |
| 16. Becomes the world policeman. | Matches Rev.13:15 – Significantly, USA is already demonstrating this role. (See pages 170-179) |

- | | |
|--|---|
| 17. Calls upon all nations to form a likeness to the first beast's system | Rev.13:14 – Significantly, Protestant America is already showing its willingness to dictate to the nations of the earth. (See pages 180-181) |
| 18. All other nations will follow in forming this likeness to Rome by enforcing the first beast's mark. | Rev.13:14-16 – Significantly, even Rome herself says, “As goes America, so goes the world.” (See Pages 181-182) |
| 19. Will impose trade “sanctions” | Matches Rev.13:17 – Significantly, the power that first introduced “sanctions” into global politics was this same Protestant America. (See pages 182-183) |
| 20. Will impose a death decree. | Matches Rev.13:15 - Significantly, the only Western world power which has an active death penalty today is Protestant America. (pages 183-184) |

***SOME OF THESE
SPECIFICATIONS
ARE ONLY “IMAGINED”?***

The “Satan” theorist accused me of being “selective” in listing the specifications. Such a cheap charge does not measure up when God’s Word is examined carefully.

From prejudiced, careless, or shallow reading of the texts, one can easily miss some of these specifications and say they don’t exist. But with prayerful meditation these passages will become clearer – like a distant object that comes **more sharply into focus the longer you look at it.**

I ask you, is the fulfilment of this prophecy looking healthy as we watch Protestant America today? If so, then all the symbols find an application, and all the ground is covered. If it does not, then it follows that:

1. Bible prophecy is silent about an end times super power that is mightier than all the kingdoms of the past. Then, in this case,
2. The symbol of the second beast is left without any ruling power to which it can apply.

But the No. 1 supposition is not probable, and the No. 2 supposition is not possible.

What is one to make of this astonishing correlation of Bible prophecy with history? This is world history and not fiction.

The identification of Protestant America as the earth beast was made long, long ago, BEFORE the 20 fulfilments fell into place. That identification was made on just a few points. But as time went on, the other fulfilments, one by one, fell into place.

Of course, I may screw up my nose and say that Protestant America is not what the Bible was predicting. But if you give this a fair chance – and **test it** – it fulfils the Bible's 20 specifications – **PRECISELY**.

It would be a miracle, indeed, if all these coincidences were purely accidental. It could not be by mere chance that the rise and history of Protestant America presents a picture in which the details fit together like the pieces of a jigsaw puzzle.

And this **sequence of invariable correlation and conformity** gives us a feeling of security that we are not on the wrong path.

All arguments to the contrary are irrelevant in the face of the astonishing fact that this prophecy HAS BEEN and IS BEING fulfilled! It's almost as if the beasts of Revelation are jumping off the pages of Scripture right before our eyes.

* * * * *

Who wants to know,
will surely reach the truth,
but who wants to ignore,
will deny all evidences,
even the most serious proofs.

- *Serge Monast,*
Canadian journalist, 1994

THE SECOND BEAST (partial comparison)

WHAT IS REQUIRED	GOODS DELIVERED?	GOODS DELIVERED?
Bible requirements for the 2 nd beast	Satan	Protestant America
1. Not an individual person, but a corporate ruling power like the first beast	X	✓
2. Will be rising about the time the first beast goes into captivity, around 1798	X	✓
3. Will arise in a new location away from the turbulent sea of warring “peoples, multitudes, and nations, and tongues.”	X	✓
4. Is a young power at the time.	X	✓
5. Grows up silently, peacefully, like a plant coming out of the earth.	X	✓
6. Is subordinate to and under the direction of the first beast.	X	✓
7. Promotes the first beast over itself.	X	✓
8. Receives its power and authority from the first beast.	X	✓
	<p>Nothing yet fulfilled Highly speculative.</p> <p>Cannot match these 8 Bible requirements.</p>	<p>The prophecy is fulfilling before our eyes.</p> <p>It satisfies every one of the 20 Bible requirements.</p>

OOPS!

The new yacht owner finally persuaded his nervous wife to join him in a day of sailing.

“Look,” he insisted, “I’ve practised enough in this harbour to know where every rock and sandbar is.”

At that point, the boat struck a submerged rock, producing a crunch from stem to stern.

“There!” said the yachtsman. “That’s one of them now!”

The “earth-beast-Satan” theory has just struck another rock ...actually, 18 of them. The preceding Bible requirements for the Rev.13 earth beast are more than enough to sink the “Satan” theory.

Three questions, please?

In Columns B and C above you have two readings of the prophecy... one that is speculation, and one which historically matches every point of the prophecy.

Here are THREE QUESTIONS for us all to answer:

1. Which column has the track record of fulfilment? **B or C?**
2. Based on **weight of evidence alone**, which of these two should command the greater trust? **B or C?** Answer: Surely the one with the track record.
3. Just suppose that next summer you need an emergency source of water. Let’s say that **Column A represents your requirement.**

Of two potential suppliers

- (1) the FIRST SUPPLIER has **no track record**, and
- (2) the SECOND SUPPLIER **has already proven** his ability to deliver the goods.

Let’s say that **Column B above represents the FIRST SUPPLIER** – and **Column C represents the SECOND SUPPLIER.**

Be honest now. To which one would you turn, for your **most likely reliable** supply? **B or C?**

Altogether, in view of the many foregoing facts and associated evidences, it is abundantly clear that **Satan does not fulfil all of the characteristics of the second beast**. Such a notion becomes absurd.

10

REQUEST TO PRODUCE

PROPOSITION NEEDING PROOF:

***That the Revelation 13 second beast
(the earth beast) is Satan himself in person.***

1. Please produce one Bible statement that the Daniel-Revelation **pattern** of beasts as empires is **changed** to make the Rev.13 earth beast a mere individual person.
2. **Produce one Bible text** stating that “*therion*” (beast) **in symbolic prophecy** applies not to an empire, but to an individual person.
3. Submit one Bible statement that the **earth beast** appears **in the form of a man**.
4. Produce one Bible statement that the **earth beast** is **Satan** himself.
5. Submit one Bible statement that the **false prophet** of Revelation is Satan himself appearing personally.
6. Give one Bible text showing that **the earth beast** is **boss** over the first beast (the papal beast).
7. Give one Bible statement that **the earth beast** is to be **the prime focus of worship**, rather than the first beast.

**If no such Bible texts are produced,
it shall be taken that you honestly admit there is
no Scriptural evidence that the earth beast is Satan.**

P.S. Why do some believe the earth beast is Satan? **On a man’s say so!** Friends in Oregon, USA, sponsored this same man to conduct meetings in Grants Pass. He made a prediction that did not come to pass – and then, when it did not come to pass, he said that “***God must have changed His mind.***” This is the same man who tells us that America in prophecy cannot be proved!

11

CHALLENGES SIDE-STEPPED

You will notice that some of the demands for proof issued to “the-second-beast-is-Satan” promoter included variations of the following:

“Produce one Bible text stating that the two-horned beast coming out of the earth is Satan himself.”

Our “Satan theory” friend tossed up some arguments. But, these did not supply the requested evidence for his theories. **He sidestepped the requests for evidence.**

“If not Satan, then not America either”?

To four of the challenges, his response comprised variations of this argument:

OBJECTION:

You ask me to produce a Bible statement that the earth beast is Satan himself. But there is also no Bible statement telling us the earth beast is “Protestant America”.

So produce one Bible text stating that the two-horned beast coming out of the earth is Protestant America.

IN REALITY:

The argument is that in Revelation 13, Protestant America is not mentioned any more than Satan is.

Sounds like a pretty balanced argument, right? And one might be inclined to go along with that? It is true that in the verses describing the second beast, Satan is not mentioned by name. Neither is Protestant America. So both are on equal footing?

One might like to think so. But two problems arise with that analogy.

1. Satan's habitual mention is now suddenly absent

Have you noticed how, under one or other of his known names, **Satan is mentioned constantly, repeatedly, consistently, right through Revelation?** He is called the dragon, the serpent, the devil, and Satan – frequently, habitually and clearly.

And why is this? It is so that there will be **no shade of doubt about his identity** when he appears personally in one prophetic event after another.

Let's say it again. When Satan is under discussion, the Bible comes straight out and says so.

"...the synagogue of Satan" (Rev.2:9)
 "...the devil shall cast..." (2:10)
 "...where Satan's seat is" (2:13)
 "...where Satan dwelleth." (2:13)
 "...the depths of Satan" (2:24)
 "...the synagogue of Satan" (3:9)
 "...that they should not worship devils" (9:20)
 "...great red dragon" (12:3)
 "...and the dragon" (12:4)
 "...fought against the dragon" (12:7)
 "...and the dragon fought" (12:7)
 "...the great dragon...that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan" (12:9)
 "...the devil is come down" (12:12)
 "...when the dragon saw" (12:13)
 "...from the face of the serpent" (12:14)
 "And the serpent cast out" (12:15)
 "...which the dragon cast out" (12:16)
 "And the dragon was wroth" (12:17)
 "...the dragon gave him" (13:2)
 "...worshipped the dragon" (13:4)

You will notice that especially in chapter 12, and the early part of chapter 13, the prophecy is talking about Satan.

But when Satan is no longer in the narrative, you don't find him named. So now, in chapter 13, comes the second beast...called, simply, a beast (Greek: *therion*) – just like the other beasts in prophecy before it.

Ask yourself: Since Satan is habitually mentioned by name throughout Revelation, then, if the second beast is Satan, **why suddenly stop** calling him Satan?

Think about this. Satan is **directly named numerous times** when he is working against God and persecuting His people. Satan is clearly identified time after time, by name – because *God wants us to know it's him*. (Just look at those texts above.)

***SO WHY ISN'T SATAN
NAMED IN REV.13:11-17
- WHEN HE SHOULD BE?***

But now, we are asked to believe, Satan appears before the world as the second beast. And the Bible suddenly fails to name him. In **the most important event of Satan's 6,000 year reign**, he appears personally, face to face, before the whole world, pretending to be Jesus Christ. It is the BIGGEST event of his career – staging the fake Second Coming of Christ! So why this sudden **failure to name him**?

Let's face it. If the second beast of Rev.13 is really this dazzling, greatest historic, satanic appearance of all time, then it should not be so difficult to find his name mentioned here. This would be the most likely of all places in the Bible to name Satan – if this second beast is really Satan.

But his name is glaringly absent from this passage.

Could it be that this second beast is NOT Satan's personal crowning appearance? You are right. Satan is not under discussion here. Believe it. Neither is he personally present in chapters 14 and 15.

But from chapter 16 onward, Satan comes back into the picture again. The Bible says so. Then it starts talking about him again... and each time it names him clearly. And this naming of Satan continues right through

the book.... Dragon, Devil, Satan... just as before. This habit of naming Satan doesn't stop until after Satan is definitely destroyed and out of the picture (chapters 21 and 22).

“...out of the mouth of the dragon” (16:13)

“...spirits of devils” (16:14)

“...habitation of devils” (18:2)

“...the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan” (20:2)

“...Satan shall be loosed” (20:7)

“...and the Devil that deceived them” (20:10)

If the second beast of Revelation 13 is Satan himself, the consistency of the book of Revelation would demand that he be still named. It would be **out of character NOT to name him** – if he were really the Revelation 13 second beast.

But the Bible does not cooperate with this “Satan-is-the-second-beast” theory.

With all these **so many places** in Revelation where Satan is mentioned, the fact that he is omitted...missing... absent, here... surely tells us something. The case for the earth beast to be Satan is looking very shaky.

If you want this second beast to be Satan, you have to guess, conjecture and speculate. No matter how good you think your argument is, it is not Scripture. It is private interpretation.

2. Good reason why Protestant America would NOT be named

All right, you may ask... Why isn't Protestant America named? It is not named for the same reason that the Roman papacy is not named. **Because the terms “papacy” and “America” did not exist** when Revelation was written.

But unlike America, Satan **IS** named. So don't try comparing the name “Satan” with the name “America”. They're in a different class.

Satan's name is plastered all over Revelation. If he was the earth beast, you'd expect it to say so!

In fact, Satan is mentioned all the way from Genesis to Revelation. Satan is named from the beginning of the world to the end of the world. And he's not named when the Revelation earth beast appears???

According to the Bible pattern, Satan SHOULD BE MENTIONED! If you ask me, something doesn't add up!

On the other hand we SHOULD NOT expect Protestant America to be named.

Why? Because the situation is different with Protestant America and Catholic Rome. Just because neither is named is no excuse not to recognise them. Because the name "America" is not printed in the Bible, is no excuse to chatter on about it not being named. It is no excuse to deny its God-given specifications – as many as 20 of them – sufficient to enable any honest, thinking person to make an accurate identification.

Protestant America is in the same position as both the Roman Empire and Catholic Rome. None of these is named.

But they're there. The Roman Empire is spoken of clearly in Bible prophecy (Daniel chapters 2, 7, 8 and 11; and Revelation chapter 12). The papal power is likewise described in Daniel 7, 8 and 11, as well as Revelation 12, 13, 17 and elsewhere. Yet in these books they are identified by name ***not once***.

Despite this – although neither is named – both can be recognised.

The descriptions and identification points supplied to us in both prophetic books are so clear, there is no trouble in identifying them. Likewise, in Revelation 13, the first and second "beasts" that work together are each one described so clearly that there can be no mistaking them.

The objector accepts the Roman Empire and the papacy from their ID points – even though their names are not mentioned. But now we find him protesting that the name "America" is not mentioned.

Could this betray a prejudiced mind? You be the judge.

May I say that again? If we accept that the **unnamed** Catholic papacy can be **proven as fulfilling a prophecy**, then we must be prepared equally to concede that the unnamed Protestant America can be proven by specifications similarly given.

FOR BOTH the Roman papacy and Protestant America, it is their fulfilment in history that clinches the identity.

Sadly, the objector so much wants the second beast to be Satan, that he is blind to Jesus' instruction that **“when ye see these things come to pass, know ye...”** (Luke 21:31)

We see the fulfilment of TWENTY SPECIFICATIONS – every one of them having come to pass, or on the verge of fulfilment.

Our objector friend can provide no such evidence for the second beast being Satan. In fact, of these 20 biblical requirements, there are 8 in particular that the Satan theory has no hope of matching. These are that:

1. The second beast cannot be an individual person, but a corporate ruling power like the first beast.
2. It will be rising about the time the first beast goes into captivity, around 1798.
3. It will arise in a new location away from the turbulent sea of warring “peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.”
4. It will be a young power at the time.
5. Growing up silently, peacefully, like a plant coming out of the earth.
6. It is subordinate to and under the direction of the first beast.
7. It promotes the first beast over itself.
8. It receives its power and authority from the first beast.

But these impossible-to-match requirements as far as Satan is concerned are just shrugged off as if they didn't matter.

You have to ask, Why would one persist in saying that this Bible specification doesn't count, or that that specification doesn't count? These are the protestings of one who wants to cling to a pet theory even if it kills him!

Here is the tragedy of a man in denial. Why? Because he so much WANTS the second beast to be Satan. When one has made a sincere, public stand on Satan being the second beast, understandably it is difficult for one to admit one's mistake without a battle.

His theory was found wrong on 18 points – and he didn't admit one of them!

Meanwhile, our ***REQUESTS TO PRODUCE*** stand unanswered. Some shallow arguments were proposed. People who don't have an argument are reduced to wriggling, squirming and tap dancing with non relevant texts.

Yet the critical Bible evidence needed for the "Satan-beast" theory to be true, remains missing.

And there is a good reason for this. You will never find such texts... even if you're a son of a pope.

They do not exist.

"Earth beast Satan" theory's 26 failures

We have now discovered that

- (a) Not only were **8** Bible requirements noted, which the "earth beast Satan" theory has no hope of matching (see page 193), but also
- (b) **18** reasons used for promoting the "earth beast Satan" theory, were every single one found to be unbiblical (see pages 125 to 128).

In total, that's 26 failures of this theory.

A serious blunder

See, this is how it looks to me – and please tell me if I'm wrong, but 26 failures looks to me like a **SERIOUS BLUNDER**. Beyond reasonable doubt, our smiling friend who invented this "earth-beast-is-Satan" theory has taken his viewers for a ride!

I know, I know, I've made plenty of mistakes in my time. But the most desirable gem to covet is truth. Think back. You're being taken for a ride. And you know it. You just can't bring yourself to admit it 'cause you don't want to look stupid. You won't look stupid. No one will blame you. Everyone gets snookered sometime.

“An open mind”?

But our “Satan theory” friend keeps dodging about, making excuses. “I’ll keep an open mind,” he says.

Look, I realize that at one time this “earth-beast-Satan” idea seemed nice... even a sure thing. But now, **the evidence** is rolled out, and a colossal blunder has been exposed. It boils down to this: We’re dealing with FACTS OF TRUTH... or freedom from them. That’s the choice.

Keep an open mind? Or is it *the heart* that does not want to change? Here is a warning for all of us. When the light is shown and you reject it, God does not give you more light. The light you do have will eventually go out.

It’s all about walking with God. When, in His love, He shows you and me flaws in a way we’re going, we gladly relinquish that way. We accept the righteousness of His character to fill us, so that we have the grace and humility to follow His guidance. And His leading will never disappoint.

12

CONCLUSION

You may have noticed that many of the objections raised by those promoting an individual (Satan) as the earth beast, or rejecting Protestant America as the fulfilment, are no more than peripheral questions or objections.

These objections were based on

- (a) a misunderstanding of Bible passages, and
- (b) a failure to take into account the relentless fulfilment by world events.

One may not see a wide stream, if one concentrates on just a ripple. One may take on board the weight of evidence as a whole or just nit-pick on peripheral details...

Dancing around the perimeter stabbing at the edge is like a man arguing against God's law who gets stuck on one apparent contradictory Bible text – instead of the overall picture. Any of us could zero in on one little thing and ignore the total picture of Bible teaching on this subject.

Peripheral questions do not alter the overall picture - the historical fact that every one of the 20 biblical identification points of the second beast is faithfully matched by one ruling power in history - the Protestant American system alone. These 20 identification points are not selective. Every one of them is 100% biblical.

When a symbol is used, we must let the Bible give the interpretation of that symbol. (2 Pet.1:19,20)

Compared with many of these 20 biblical identification requirements, the Satan theory fails miserably. Case closed.

You have asked the Lord for the truth. In the wealth of Bible evidences presented, God is showing you the truth.

When the Holy Spirit shows you, you have to be ready to accept the answers to your prayer. You have to be ready in your mind to accept what is truth, even though it may go against the grain.

Instead of nit-picking peripheral points to prove it wrong, you and I need to ask the Holy Spirit to help us be receptive. (And not just once, but continually, constantly, praying for this receptive attitude to be imparted to you.)

Get ready.

The evidence fits like a glove.

God is speaking to you.

Don't reject it.

If you wait for the appearance of any individual person to fulfil the Revelation 13 prophecy, you will be late. (And, of course, this is what Satan wants.)

Closing events are well advanced. Prophecy is fulfilling before our eyes.

If we have made a wrong identification and certain events occur in a way we are not expecting, or some turn out to be already fulfilled when we are still expecting them to occur, we could be caught unprepared.

We all need to seriously ask the Holy Spirit to shape our minds into harmony with His.

But more vital than anything else – even more crucial than any physical preparation for coming events - is to make sure one's heart is safe with Jesus, moment by moment. Anything less than a total commitment to our Lord and His truth will not see us through. Our future from now on must be with Him. And He is standing by to help. My prayer is that God will bless, guide and protect you and your loved ones, until we stand together in our heavenly Father's presence.

APPENDIX A:

ROME CONTROLS ALL ORGANIZATIONS

IT IS CLAIMED: “The problem with historicism today is that it is still **bashing the pope** and the Roman Catholic church as though the 18th century Reformation was still going on. Historicists fail to recognise that the world is also made up of other religious systems comprising millions of people.... Yes, the papacy and US will be major players during end-time events, but they will not be the only players. **This world is made up of many political and religious systems** and Revelation’s story not only identifies many of them, it includes them all.” (Larry Wilson, *Warning: Revelation is About to be Fulfilled*, 1997, pp.28,29)

What is **the problem** said to be?: It is “**still bashing the pope...**as though the... Reformation was still going on.” In other words, **stop zeroing in on the papacy.**

This has the familiar ring of Jesuit advice. Compare it with these two statements:

* A church president in a California court: "**Although** it is true that **there was** a period... of widespread **anti-popery** among conservative Protestant denominations in the early part of this century and the latter part of the last, [this] **has now been consigned to the historical trash heap...**" (Neal C. Wilson, *Civil Case #74-2025 CBR, presided over by Judge Charles B. Renfrew, U.S. District Court, San Francisco, California, 1974-1975.*)

* An SDA pastor to a new church attendee holding the *Great Controversy* book that exposes the papacy: “**We don’t believe that any more.**” Then he quickly crossed himself as a good Catholic would.

IN REALITY: What do these men say in common? ANSWER: “**Don’t point at Rome any more.**” After all, aren’t there are plenty of other organizations to focus on? This bears the “trademark” **typical of smiling Jesuit infiltrators** – wolves in sheep’s clothing – who have accomplished their dampening down agenda very plausibly.

The truth is, Rome **stands alone above ALL** other powers on earth.

As Catholic priest D. S. Phelan once profoundly declared, “The pope is the ruler of the world. All the emperors, all the kings, all the princes, all the presidents of the world are as these altar boys [acolytes] of mine.” (D. S. Phelan, *Western Watchman*, June 27, 1912.)

Listen to one of our best modern historians: “**No political event or circumstance can be evaluated without the knowledge of the Vatican’s part in it. And no significant world situation exists in which the Vatican does not play an important explicit or implicit role.**” (Avro Manhattan, 1960 *The Vatican And World Politics*)

Did you know? **Rome is the SINGLE DRIVING FORCE behind every major world event – and most, if not all, of these other organizations.**

If that is true, then the Reformation warning **needs to be revived and shouted from the rooftops more now** than at any time in history. **Rome is returning to world domination – over all religions.** Prophecy says that **God’s servants will strongly expose** this system. In fact, this will be the core of God’s final message to the world.

It will be shouted “mightily with a strong voice, saying...Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.” (Rev.17:4,5 ; 18:1-4)

God’s servants will **NOT tone this down.** We are called to wage a continuous war, at the risk of imprisonment, of losing property and even life itself, to defend the law of God, which is being made void by the laws of the papacy.

No, the issue is NOT just a whole lot of different organizations. God is shouting to us about ONE CHIEF PLAYER, **who controls them all.** That player is Rome.

Rome is the SINGLE DRIVING FORCE behind every major world event affecting God’s people.

Was the following writer just guessing, or did divine guidance inspire this prophecy:

“When Protestantism shall stretch her hand across the gulf to grasp the hand of the Roman power, when she shall reach over the abyss to clasp

hands with Spiritualism, when, under the influence of this threefold union, our country shall repudiate every principle of its Constitution... and shall make provision for the propagation of papal falsehoods and delusions, then we may know that the time has come for the marvelous working of Satan, and that the end is near.” (E.G.White, *Testimonies*, Vol. 5, p. 451)

Bible prophecy is indeed 100% accurate regarding ***Rome’s desire to do all that antichrist will do.***

This is not about individual Catholic people

We should understand from the outset that Roman Catholics are not the problem. Many of the Jesuits are not even the problem. The Catholic people know NOTHING of what's going on. If they did, there would be a march on the Vatican establishments tomorrow.

The Book of Revelation shows that there are many sincere individuals in the Roman Catholic organization (see Revelation 14:7; 18:4). God does not condemn such ones. In fact, He calls them “My people”. Rather, it is the system to which God objects.

How Rome controls all nations

The Jesuit General is the absolute, complete, and total dictator of the Order. When he speaks, his provincials move. The provincials are his major subordinates. There are around 90 provincials right now. The Jesuit Order has divided the world into about 90 regions. For each region, there is a Jesuit provincial. There are 10 provincials in the United States.

JESUITS MANIPULATE THE WHOLE WORLD

The Jesuit General exercises full and complete power over the Order. He meets with his provincials. When they decide to start a war, he gets the information from the provincial of that country, how best to go about this, the demeanor of the people, and then he uses legitimate grievances - like the 1964 Civil Rights Movement, to foam an agitation. That was ALL a

Jesuit agitation. The end result was more consolidation of power in Washington with the 1964 Civil Rights Act. That Act was written by Notre Dame President Rev. Theodore Hesburgh.

The Jesuit General **rules the world** through his provincials. And the provincials then, of course, rule the lower Jesuits, and there are many Jesuits who are not "professed" (Professed = taking the Luciferian blood oath). Most of the lower Jesuits have no idea what's going on at the top. They have no concept of the power of their Order.

It's just like Freemasonry, the lower degrees have no idea that the High Shriner Freemasons are working for the Jesuit General. They think that they're just doing works and being good people. But the bottom line is that the high-level Freemasons are subject, also, to the Jesuit General. The Jesuit General, with Fredrick the Great, wrote the High Degrees, the last 8 Degrees, of the Scottish Rite Freemasonry when Fredrick protected them from the Pope in 1773.

The Jesuit Order, and the most powerful Freemason they had in the craft, Fredrick the Great, were working together. The French Revolution and the Napoleonic Wars were carried out by Freemasonry. Everything Napoleon did, and the Jacobins, whatever they did, advanced the agenda of the Jesuit Order.

The Jesuit Order has no women. They have no love of a woman because that could lead you to allegiance to your wife and family, and could effect your absolute obedience to the General. That's why, although their trained infiltrating agents will marry, they themselves will NEVER be married, and that's one of the great KEYS to their success. (This is referred to in Daniel 11:37.)

INFILTRATION IS COMPLETE

There is no doubt that Rome's orders and agents are now strategically placed throughout the highest levels of power.

They can betray a nation and walk away. They can betray us in Vietnam and walk away. They can betray us every time we go to the hospital and get radiated and cut and drugged, and walk away. Their ultimate goal is the rule of the world, with the pope of their making, from Solomon's rebuilt Temple in Jerusalem. That's their ultimate goal.

SPORT AND AMUSEMENTS

Rome's Jesuits are in control of virtually everything. Jesuits set up and control the Knights of Malta. The High Knights are good, dear brothers with the High Mafia Dons—the Gambinos, the Lucchese, the Columbos, all of them.

The Jesuits are the ones behind professional sports. The owner of the Pittsburgh Steelers is a Knight of Malta. The owner of the Detroit Lions is a Knight of Malta. All your top owners of these ball clubs, for the most part, are Knights of Malta, getting the people whooped up in this hoopla over games and sports, while they're busy preparing a tyranny. And this part of their game plan is written in the *Protocols*—that they would create “amusements” to divert the public's attention, while Rome secretly manipulates her way to power.

Another one they used was Walt Disney, a 33rd degree Freemason with his Disneyworld, and Disneyland. They create all of these amusements and games and pastimes to get the people drunk with pleasure, while they're busy dismantling the Protestant biblical form of government.

It's the Jesuits who control Hollywood, not the Jews. It is only Jews who are front-men, that is the Jesuit way. Jews who are involved in Hollywood and working for the Mafia and for the Cardinal.

WARS AND MASSACRES

The wars of the 20th century, including their massacres of the Serbs, the Jews and others, are all attributable to the Jesuits. (Edmond Paris, *The Secret History of the Jesuits and The Vatican Against Europe*)

THE NAZI SS

The Jesuits used the SS to kill the Jews in Europe. In Russia, the Jesuits followed with the SS and purged Western Russia of all its Jews. That is why Jesuit-trained Stalin deliberately killed 40,000 of his best officers. That is why he kicked out his best generals, purged them, because he wanted to make sure that the Red Army would lose with the advance of the German army. He knew that following that would come the SS and purge Russia of the Jews that Stalin so hated.

THE CIA AND INTELLIGENCE AGENCIES

It was Rome's Knights of Malta who financed Hitler. They were behind Operation Paperclip (led by J. Peter Grace) which in the late 40s and 1950s brought over 2,000 top German Nazis and scientists to the US.

The CIA was set up by the Knights of Malta using Allen Dulles, the Vatican point man who had helped organize the funding of Hitler. One of the founders of the CIA was "Wild" Bill Donovan, an Irish Roman Catholic, whose brother was a Dominican priest, Vincent.

The Jesuits had brought in all of their top Nazi SS soldiers into the CIA.

Then, in the late 1970s and early 1980s, a massive electronic intelligence gathering network was set up to collect banking and financial data, worldwide. The network was headquartered in Toronto Canada.

Ptech software was installed on the computer systems of every government agency connected with Sept 11th – including the White House, the FAA, and NORAD. It is frightening to contemplate that Ptech software has the ability to override data and command procedures within NORAD and FAA systems – and even the White House.

Today, Ptech software allows control, override of normal procedures and change of data on the systems it is "monitoring". Put simply, this means that, undetected, outsiders could override government orders at crucial times.

The Jesuit General is in complete control of the international intelligence community. Understand that the Jesuit General controls the CIA, the FBI, the KGB, the Israeli Mossad, the German BND, the British SIS. The Jesuit General is in COMPLETE CONTROL of the entire intelligence apparatus, FBI, every bureaucratic agency in America, all of it. He is in complete control of it.

WAS THE VATICAN BEHIND 9/11?

The whole world watched the results of that control on Sept 11, 2001 – and learnt soon afterwards of the heavy German involvement in the futures trading in airline and insurance stocks just prior to the attacks.

Early on the morning of 9/11, shortly after Bush took off on Air force One from Florida, without any fighter escort, “the Secret Service received an anonymous message saying, ‘Air Force One is next.’ The caller spoke in the code words [known only to the agency’s staff] relating to Air Force One procedures.” (Webster Griffin Tarpley, *9-11 Synthetic Terror: Made in USA*. Joshua Tree, CA: Progressive, 2005,2006, p.279)

They put Bush through the wringer with threats of a missile coming at Air Force One, and the threat of destruction of his ranch at Crawford, Texas.

The threat was made that if George Bush refused to launch the war of civilizations (against Islam), the plotters were in a position to do it on their own in a much more sweeping manner, by launching a US nuclear strike against a series of Arab and Islamic capitals. (www.reseauvoltaire.net, September 27, 2001)

“The security of the top American leaders is no longer guaranteed and the enemies of America are able to usurp the identity of President Bush, including to order a nuclear launch.” (*Ibid.*)

“American code words were used showing a knowledge of procedures that made the threat credible.... How did they get the code-word information and transponder know-how that established their mala fides?” (*New York Times*, September 13, 2001)

It was noted that the code name of Air Force One is changed daily, and that the message threatening Air Force One was transmitted in that day’s top-secret White House code words. “Angel is next.” That was the code word for Air Force One for that day.

In fact, they “were picking up and deciphering the presidential plane’s incoming and outgoing transmissions... The discovery shocked everyone in the president’s emergency operations center... Their first question was: How did the terrorists access top-secret White House codes and procedures? Is there a mole, or more than one enemy spy in the White House, the Secret Service, the FBI, the CIA, or the Federal aviation administration?

“The terrorists had also obtained the code groups of the National Security Agency and were able to penetrate the NSA’s state-of-the-art electronic surveillance systems. Indeed, they seem to have at their disposal an

electronic capability that was more sophisticated than that of the NSA.”
(Tarpley, pp.295,296)

Just join the dots. Linking the Catholic Nazi-founded computer companies with access to America’s daily changed security codes, tells us everything.

Always, *always*, remember that Rome possesses **the finest intelligence in the world – *bar none***.

If you want to know who was behind 9/11, read Revelation 18:23,24.
Note that word in verse 24: “**ALL** that were slain upon the earth.” **ALL**.

Isn’t it interesting? When fingers were pointed at the possibility of a 9/11 “inside job”, an official rebuttal was “Surely not! Because some of our own government personnel were victims. For example, Barbara Olson, wife of former Bush Solicitor General Ted Olson, perished on the plane that slammed into the Pentagon during the 9/11 incident.” That’s what was served up to the public.

However, on September 22, 2005, Barbara Olson was captured – alive - by intelligence sources. She was wearing a disguise and **carrying a Vatican passport**.

VIETNAM WAR AND J.F. KENNEDY

Why did the Jesuit General want the Vietnam War? The people of **Vietnam**, the Buddhists, were unconvertible. They **would not convert to Catholicism**. They didn’t need Rome. There had been a Jesuit presence in Vietnam for centuries, so it had been decided that about a million or so Buddhists would have to be “purged”. They would later continue this purge of Cambodia, with Pol Pot, and the purge is yet for Thailand. It was a purging of Laos, Cambodia, and Vietnam of all these Buddhists, just as they purged the Buddhists of **China** with **Mao**, who was **completely controlled by the Jesuits**.

Kennedy was against the Vietnam War, and he was going to do away with the CIA, and undermine the power of the Jesuit controlled fiat Federal Reserve Bank.

Now, the CIA was composed of the SS. The **CIA** now was **the intelligence arm of the Vatican**. The Knights of Malta were throughout. Casey was a Knight of Malta. Angleton was a Knight of Malta. The

Knights were through and through it. Angleton manned the “Vatican desk”, and that is a desk within the CIA that has a direct link to the Vatican.

So, Kennedy wanted to end this “intelligence community”. That was the end of him. For anyone attempting to end the CIA, and attempting to end the Vietnam War, would not be allowed to do so. The big kicker was that he attacked the **Jesuits’ Federal Reserve Bank** by printing United States Notes. The Jesuits got rid of him. They killed our only Roman Catholic president.

Indeed it was a Roman Catholic, not USA Protestants, who truly sought to resist the temporal power of the pope in the USA. And in many ways, even though Kennedy was, in fact, a socialist and communist, at least he resisted the temporal power of the Pope. That’s why they got rid of John F. Kennedy.

Arlen Specter was Cardinal Spellman’s Jew in the assassination of President Kennedy, and he would never say a word about it. They use Jews for front men to blame; that is the Jesuit way.

As soon as he was assassinated, the following day, the head of the CIA went to the White House and they reverse Kennedy’s Memorandum. The CIA made the Vietnam War a full-scale, *carte blanche* war. The CIA was heavily funded, because it was a CIA war. In Vietnam they tried all of their new technology. It was a great experimental theatre, and Kennedy knew this. He knew it, and he knew that the American people had no idea what was going down. He still tried to resist it, against his father’s warnings. Because his father was the most powerful Knight of Malta in the Empire.

DRUG INDUSTRY

And guess who controls the drug industry?

The Vatican controls all of the drug trade—all of the heroin, all of the opium, all of the cocaine, everything going around in Colombia.

Colombia has a concordat with the Pope. A concordat is a treaty with the Pope. Hitler had a concordat. Mussolini had a concordat. Franco had a concordat. They want to set up a concordat in America.

Rome also controls most major pharmaceutical companies in the world. This was predicted to occur, in Revelation: “By thy sorceries [Greek: *pharmakeia* = medicine, pharmacies] were all nations deceived.” (Revelation 18:23)

When Pope Benedict visited the US in April, 2008, President Bush organized a banquet reception in the Pope’s honour. But the Pope never showed up. While they waited, he ignored the gesture, and went to visit his Cardinals.

Doesn’t that carry the message as to who is in charge?

Yes, Rome has the power to use America to do her dirty work, as well as ensure that the whole world follows – while she herself comes across as the great moral leader.

Jesuit oath

In 1981, ex-Jesuit insider Alberto Rivera, disclosed the oath he took as a professed Jesuit. We read:

Ceremony Of Induction And Extreme Oath Of The Jesuits

*(Given to a Jesuit of minor rank when he is
to be elevated to a position of command.)*

Superior Speaks:

“My son, heretofore you have been taught to act the dissembler among the Roman Catholics to be a Roman Catholic, and to be a spy even among your own brethren: to believe no man, to trust no man. Among the reformers, to be a reformer; among the Huguenots [French Protestants] to be a Huguenot: among the Calvinists, to be a Calvinist: among the Protestants [those who protest and disagree with the Roman Catholic institution], generally to be a Protestant: and obtaining their confidence to seek even to preach from their pulpits, and to denounce with all the vehemence [violent emotion] in your nature our Holy Religion and the Pope; and even to descend so low as to become a Jew among the Jews, that you might be enabled to gather together all information for the benefit of your order as a faithful soldier of the Pope.

“You have been taught to insidiously plant the seeds of jealousy and hatred between states that were at peace, and incite them to deeds of blood, involving them in war with each other, and to create revolutions and civil wars in communities, provinces and countries that were independent and prosperous, cultivating the arts and the sciences and enjoying the blessings of peace;

“To take sides with the combatants and to act secretly in concert with your brother Jesuit who might be engaged on the other side, but openly opposed to that with which you might be connected;

“Only that the church might be the gainer in the end in the conditions fixed in the treaties for peace, and that the ends justify the means.

“You have been taught your duty as a spy, to gather all statistics, facts and information in your power from every source: to ingratiate yourself into the confidence of the family circle of Protestants and heretics of every class and character, as well as that of the merchant, the banker, the lawyer, among the schools and universities, in parliament and legislatures, and in the judiciaries and councils of State, and to ‘be all things to all men’, for the Pope’s sake, whose servants we are unto death.

“You have received all your instructions heretofore as a novice [one who has no training], a neophyte [a newly ordained priest], and have served as a coadjutor [worked as a helper], confessor and priest, but you have not yet been invested with all that is necessary to command in the army of Loyola and in the service of the Pope.

“You must serve the proper time as the instrument and executioner as directed by your superiors; for none can command here who has not consecrated [made secret or holy] his labours with the blood of the heretic; for ‘without the shedding of blood no man can be saved.’

“I, _____, now, in the presence of Almighty God, the blessed Virgin Mary, the blessed Michael the Archangel, the blessed St. John the Baptist, the Holy Apostles, St. Peter and St. Paul and all the saints and sacred hosts of heaven....

“I, furthermore, promise and declare that I will, when opportunity presents, make and wage relentless war, secretly and openly, against all heretics, Protestants and Liberals, as I am directed to do.

“That when the same cannot be done openly, I will secretly use the poisoned cup, the strangulation cord, the steel of the poniard [a dagger] or

the leaden bullet, regardless of the honor, rank, dignity, or authority of the person or persons, whatever may be their condition in life, either public or private, as I at any time may be directed so to do by any agent of the Pope or superior of the brotherhood of the holy faith, of the Society of Jesus.” (Supplied by ex-Jesuit Roberto Rivera, *Double-Cross: Alberto*, Part 2, 1981)

* * * * *

2007 Confession of a Mafia leader

The grandson of Lucky Luciano, Gambino, now free after a 20 year prison term, made a guest appearance on Greg Szymanski’s radio show, *The Investigative Journal* on Liberty Radio. With nothing to lose, he revealed the secret machinations and power of the Vatican:

“When you grow up in ‘The Family’ like I did, you learn right off the bat that protection comes from everywhere, including the CIA, FBI and blessings from the Vatican who are at the top of the ladder when it comes to benefiting from Mafia street crime,” said Gambino, who became a “Made Man” at the age of five, a Mafia term used for their top street captains.

“The Vatican officials, federal judges, top politicians all used to get regular pay-offs from the Gambino Family and, in fact, the Vatican and U.S. government make more money off the illegal drug trade then we did.

“That is why I am talking after just getting out of jail after 20 years. I am talking because people need to know the U.S. government and the Vatican are more dangerous and corrupt then the Mafia ever was.

“For example, I know for a fact the Cardinal in Palermo runs the Sicilian mob and former Cardinal Spellman of New York was considered the Vatican’s American Godfather since he pulled the strings and had his hands deep into organized crime.

“I was there when [President John Kennedy] was shot and I know for a fact Rosselli was in the storm drain doing the shooting and Frank Sturgiss was also part of the hit team,” said Gambino. “The same group of guys we have talked about in the Vatican and U.S. government gave the orders and asked the Mafia families for help in taking down Kennedy.”

Although Gambino knows he’s crossing a sensitive line for going public about the inner-workings of the Mafia and its complicity with the Vatican

and U.S. government, he added that it's important for Americans to finally understand how things "really work on the streets" and how Church, State and big business are working together to destroy America.

And if there remain any doubters that the Vatican and Jesuit Order have had their dirty hands in organized crime in order to destroy the moral and financial fabric of the U.S., Gambino's confessions should lay that to rest.

"If you don't believe the hard facts and the hundreds of researchers who have implicated the Vatican to the demise of America, then believe Gambino because he learned it first hand from being on the streets and working with the top crime bosses. He has nothing to gain from lying since he has already served his time and wants to set the record straight once and for all regarding who are the real controllers of the New World Order," comments one bold researcher. (*www.libertyradiolive.com The entire interview can be heard at www.arcticbeacon.com as well as Liberty Radio.*)

APPENDIX B

FIRE FROM HEAVEN IS A COUNTERFEIT PENTECOST REVIVAL

In the **TRINITY OF EVIL**, the “dragon, beast and false prophet” of Revelation, one can perceive a twisted parody of the Christian triad of Father, Son and Holy Spirit.

TRINITY OF EVIL

This is why some commentators have referred to the dragon and the two beasts in Revelation as a kind of "evil trinity" (Beasley-Murray 1974:244). In Revelation chapters 12-13 they are the dragon, the sea beast and the earth beast. In Rev.16:13 and 20:10 they are the “dragon, the beast and the false prophet” These Scriptures clearly establish the fact that there is a Trinity of Evil.

Although Satan is behind them working in the shadows, the dragon, the beast and the false prophet are representative of three false systems.

1. Primarily, the **DRAGON** is Satan. But, in historical terms, the pagan Roman Empire is the dragon of Revelation chapter 12.

(You will recall that that same dragon had "**ten horns**" (Rev.12:3) - which links this dragon also to the Roman Empire. **Rome was the empire used by Satan as his agency to try to destroy the Saviour of the world!**)

2. The **SEA BEAST** is the Roman papal system.
3. The **EARTH BEAST (FALSE PROPHET)** is the American apostate (fallen) Protestant system.

There you have **the three major religious systems on earth** – paganism (in other words, spiritism in all its forms), Romanism and corrupted Protestantism. These three include every religion and non-religion on earth. Today, they are all, whether aware of it or not, under the influence of Satan himself.

In the Bible, we note that:

1. God the Father is supreme.
2. Jesus does nothing on his own authority, but glorifies the Father who sent him, speaking and acting only on the Father's authority (John 5:19, 30).
3. The Holy Spirit acts on Jesus' authority and glorifies Jesus alone (John 16:13-14).

Now it surely needs no argument to prove that these three evil entities are opposed to and are the antithesis of the three entities in the Godhead.

1. The devil stands opposed to God the Father - "Ye are of your father, the devil". (John 8:40, etc.)
2. The antichrist beast stands opposed to God the Son - his very name shows this.
3. Then the earth beast logically stands opposed to the Holy Spirit. If this be the case, then our present task is greatly simplified: it is merely a matter of noting what is separately predicted of the two beasts in Rev. 13 so as to ascertain which of them stands opposed to Christ and which to the Holy Spirit.

From the perspective that this second beast, the False Prophet, acts in counterfeiting the work of the Holy Spirit, then the two horns have an **extra** pertinent significance, for two is the number of witness. And just as Christ declared the Spirit of God should "testify (bear witness) of Me" (John 15:26), so the third entity in the Trinity of Evil bears witness to the first beast. (See Rev.13:12,14 – "...causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast... saying... that they should make an image to the [first] beast...") It is the first beast, not the second, who is worshipped. (v. 12)

As already intimated, there are several things which show plainly that the second beast is the third identity in the Trinity of Evil, that is, the one who is the satanic parody of the Holy Spirit. Just as the true Holy Spirit "shall speak not of himself" but directs worship to Jesus Christ, so this earth beast, this satanic parody of the Holy Spirit, directs worship away from himself, to the sea beast (who blasphemes by lifting itself up in the place of Christ).

This second beast, who directs worship away from himself, accurately imitates the Holy Spirit in this respect, for nowhere in the New Testament is the third member of the Godhead presented as a distinct Object of worship; instead, He is to "glorify" Christ (John 16:14) by drawing out our hearts unto that blessed One who loved us and gave Himself for us.

And as the true Holy Spirit brought down the “fire” of Pentecost, so will the second beast bring down counterfeit heavenly “fire” in a false spiritual revival.

Again; it has been generally recognized by prophetic students that our Lord referred to the Antichrist when He said, "I am come in My Father's name, and ye receive Me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive" (John 5:43).

If the one here mentioned as coming "in his own name" is the Antichrist, then it is certain that the second beast of Rev. 13 cannot be the Antichrist, for he does not come "in his own name". On the contrary, the second beast comes in the name of the first beast as is clear from Rev. 13:12-15. Just as the Holy Spirit - the third entity of the Godhead speaks "not of Himself" (John 16:13), but is here to glorify Christ, so the earth beast - the third entity in the Evil Trinity - seeks to glorify the first Beast, the antichrist power.

Three things are said in connection with the second beast which correspond closely with the work of the Holy Spirit.

1. "he maketh **fire** come down from heaven" (Rev. 13:13), compare Acts 2:1-4.
2. "he had power to **give life** unto the image of the beast" (Rev. 13:15), compare John 3:6 - "**born** of the Spirit".
3. "he [the second beast] causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or **in their foreheads**" (Rev. 13:16), cf Eph. 4:30 - "Grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption". And the Holy Spirit places God's seal (mark) **in the saints' foreheads**. (Rev.7:3)

I invite you to ponder these extra thoughts in relation to the “fire from heaven” called down by the second beast, as being a miraculous exhibition of false pentecostal power.

APPENDIX C

THE JESUITS AND PROTOCOLS OF ZION

Who introduced Communism in 1848? None other than the Jesuits. They trained Karl Marx, the Jewish Front Name, and set him loose. That is the Jesuit way. They tutored him in the British Museum, according to Alberto Rivera, an ex-Jesuit.

So Marx, the Jewish Freemason, was to be the one to put forward this Communism for the world, so that Communism would look like a Jewish brain-child, so that Communism could be blamed on the Jews. What is not told is that the Jews involved in the implementing of Communism were Masonic Jews. Karl Marx was a 33rd-degree Freemason, a worshipper of Lucifer, whose father wanted nothing to do with him, because his father was a Baptist preacher.

Jewish Freemasonry, controlled by the Jesuits, implemented Communism in Russia.

Lenin, the half-Jew, was a Freemason. That civil war that took place from 1917-1922, for 5 years, was given the appearance that it was primarily Yiddish. They were on the streets of Russia talking Yiddish; they had Yiddish signs; and it was wanted to give the impression to the world that this revolution was of Jewish origin.

For 10 years after the revolution, the Jews fared very well, but in 1922, Joseph Stalin came to power. Stalin was a great Jew-hater. He was educated by Jesuits. The Jesuits trained Joseph Stalin, brought him in after the Revolution, and made him Secretary of the Communist Party in 1922, until he died in 1953.

WHAT ABOUT THE PROTOCOLS OF ZION?

Was not this evil agenda spawned by Jews?

The *Jesuit Oath* is similar to the *Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*. The Jesuits obviously wrote the *Protocols* because they have carried out every protocol in that little handbook. They have carried everything out.

Indeed there are different *Protocols*, there may be as many as 20 or 30 *Protocols*. That is not so important as it is to understand that ALWAYS the *Protocols* further the agenda of the Jesuit Order.

The *Protocols* played a big part of the Jesuit, or Communist takeover of Russia. After the Bolsheviks took over and killed the Russian Orthodox leaders, purged Russia of Protestants, and set up the gulag system, the Jesuits behind it all, could openly invite the Jesuits to take over. The Jesuits were given formal re-entry into Russia in 1922, after the Bolshevik Revolution and Civil War. The Russian College was erected in Rome in 1929, so they could prepare Russian Jesuits to rule Russia. And that's what they've done. The Jesuit General rules through the KGB, just like they rule America through the CIA and the FBI.

The *Protocols* outline this. Remember, the *Protocols* were discovered in Russia, and translated by an Englishman, Marsden. It was the huge gulag system, the huge concentration camp system, that gave the Jesuits practice to do this in Europe, and the plan is to do it SOON in America. The big thing was, that using the *Protocols*, the Jesuits were able to blame it all on the Jews. A demonic masterpiece.

This BLAMING THE JEWS was their great accomplishment that continues to serve the Jesuit purposes so well today. Many people who know something is wrong, and are highly motivated to do something, are derailed and become part of the problem by blaming the Jews. It is amazing, yet all too true that, in the process of this stealing, killing, and destruction, they blamed it on the Jews. Blaming the Jews then justified in the eyes of the European people, the annihilation of the Jewish race in Europe. Was it not the Jews who did this in Russia? The Jews killed all the Christians in Russia! The Jews sent them off to Siberia! After all, wasn't Trotsky a Jew? Wasn't Lenin a Jew? It is all the Jews! So, they fell, and continue to fall for the bait of the *Protocols*. How sad and stupid and counter productive to the purposes of the true God! But the *Protocols* even today, cause people to trade the love heart motivator for that of hate. That is the great Luciferian success of the *Protocols*.

So they blamed it all on the Jews, and purged Europe of its Jews. Europe is primarily Roman Catholic now. It's a Roman Catholic bloc, and it will be the army of the Anti-Christ, with its European Union. The Jews, then, were forced out of the nations to Israel. And remember, during World War II, when the Jews tried to escape and they were desperate to get out of Germany, do you think Jew-controlled Russia would let the Jews in?

If the Jews really controlled Russia, they could have gone right into Russia. They were not allowed. Stalin would not allow any Jews to go into Russia. Churchill would not allow any Jews to go into England. And Roosevelt would not allow any Jews to go into America. They were not allowed to escape.

Alberto Rivera told us much about the origin of the *Protocols*. He was a Jesuit who found the Truth. He renounced Lucifer's Jesuits and shined the light of truth upon them. Alberto was greatly maligned and not helped at all by the Apostate Protestants in America. He was helped, somewhat, by Jack Chick. Jack Chick published his story in six volumes, titled *Alberto I, II, III, IV, V, & VI*.

Alberto Rivera says that it was Jews aligned with the Pope who published the *Protocols*. The Jesuits' hand is all over the *Protocols*. Whether they used some traitorous Jews, or did it alone, is debatable. What is not debatable is that they alone, were the ones who were able to bring this to pass. Alberto Rivera, was greatly hated by the Vatican because he was a very high Jesuit who came out and, in the late '60s, about 1969, exposed the power of Rome in the ecumenical movement. Alberto let us know that Rome controlled Kathryn Kuhlman; that Rome controlled Billy Graham; that Rome controlled Ronald Reagan and the whole American government.

APPENDIX D

EXTRA NOTES ON THE FIRST BEAST OF REV.13

Let me first say something that's very important.

You see, the reason why God speaks as strongly against worshipping the "beast" as He does is because He loves the people. He loves all people. Reader, He loves you.

He knows that a person can't possibly be happy who follows this power and receives its mark. He knows that ". . . they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name." (Rev.14:11) In following this power there's no rest.

He loves us so much that He warns us in the strongest language known to man. Listen to this.

"And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice; If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, the same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation." (Rev.14:9,10)

Strong language.

Language of love is always strong when it's a question of life and death to the one it loves.

I ask you, what more could our heavenly Father do?

God sent His own Son to die a hell death in our place. Not one need experience the awful fate of those who follow the beast and receive its mark.

Jesus made a way of escape. He suffered the agony of Gethsemane, and the torture of His mock trial where they beat Him until His back was like raw meat. They bowed down in mockery and hit Him in the head with a stick, driving the thorns into His brow and sending blood running down His face.

Watch Him stagger on His way to Calvary. The Son of God falls on His face in the dirt. He endures the horror of our sins while His blood runs drop by drop to the foot of the cross. Look at His quivering lips as He cries "My God, My God, why hast Thou forsaken Me?"

There He hangs - like a snake on a pole, writhing in agony, drinking the last drops of the wrath of God against sin. "As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness," Jesus was lifted up - for you.

Do you see? He did it for you. He took what you and I deserve. Do you see why our Heavenly Father is so anxious that we not follow the beast or receive its mark?

We need not receive that awful penalty. Jesus paid it all.

When they were pounding the spikes through His tender flesh, and Jesus prayed "Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do", He was praying for you and me then also.

He was praying for you! Will you choose Him now as your personal Saviour and follow Him all the way?

You'll be so happy that you did.

Trusting Him; obeying Him - even unto death; abiding in His love through prayer and Bible study; total surrender and a loving, happy relationship. Only then will you be safe from worshiping the beast and receiving his "mark" - only then. Soon you'll see why.

Another thing we must understand is that in identifying the beast, God is not talking about sincere people who are involved with it "ignorantly."

Do you know what I mean?

When He identifies it He is talking about "the system", the leaders, who know what they are doing and deliberately disobey and change the word of God.

Do you see? Our God is a tender Father. He only holds accountable those who understand what the Bible commands and knowingly disobey, or, those who turn away from hearing His word and are "willingly ignorant."

The beast exists now. Many honest Christians who are now involved with it will soon learn the facts about it. They will hear God's call to come out of it. And they will respond.

Don't be fooled by thinking that the "beast" is a computer in Europe somewhere. That is only a smoke screen to get people off the track that the Bible points out. God's Word makes it so clear that even an honest child can see it.

Let's take a close look at this thing to make sure there's no mistake.

How the papacy first arose

Although this great organization was not officially established with political authority until 538 AD, the Apostle Paul saw forces at work that were preparing the way. And within 20 years of the apostles' death, the perversion of the truth of Christ had become widespread. What was going on back there that he could have seen? Here's what happened.

After Jesus went back to heaven, the early church grew rapidly under the blessing of the Holy Spirit. Jesus had predicted the treatment that His people were to receive.

"They shall deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you; and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake." (Matt.24:9)

That was literally fulfilled. Look at this amazing account.

"Their execution was made into a game," wrote Tacitus, describing the persecutions under Nero. "They were covered with the skins of wild animals and torn to pieces by dogs. They were hung on crosses. They were burned, wrapped in flammable material and set on fire, to illuminate the night.

"To escape death, they had but to repudiate Christ and sacrifice to the emperor." Some did, but many more were tortured to death rather than deny their Lord.

Paganism foresaw that should the gospel triumph, her temples and altars would be swept away; therefore she summoned her forces to destroy Christianity.

Christians were stripped of their possessions and driven from their homes. Great numbers sealed their testimony with their blood. Noble and slave, rich and poor, learned and ignorant, were alike slain without mercy.

Beneath the hills outside the city of Rome, long galleries had been tunnelled through earth and rock; the dark and intricate network of passages extended for miles beyond the city walls. In these underground retreats the followers of Christ buried their dead; and here also, when suspected, they found a home.

Many were "tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection." (Hebrews 11:35) They rejoiced that they were accounted worthy to suffer for the truth, and songs of triumph ascended from the midst of the crackling flames."

Satan couldn't wipe them out. For years emperors Nero and Diocletian slaughtered them by the thousands.

"You may kill us, torture us, condemn us," said one Christian to his persecutors, "your injustice is the proof that we are innocent." (Justin Martyr, *Apology*, para.50)

Until 313 AD it was against the law to be a Christian. Such a person was an automatic criminal. But the followers of Jesus spread everywhere.

Satan could see that he had to change his tactics. He would come up with a better scheme. What could the devil think of to do better than killing them?

Make things easy - and infiltrate! Like a wise general he would corrupt the church from the inside.

Watch what happens.

A great shout goes up in the empire. Emperor Constantine has allegedly become a Christian! The Christians are euphoric.

No more being torn apart by dogs and lions, or used as dupes to be cut down in cold blood, or human torches to light up the arena for the gladiators. Now Christianity is the state religion! Things are going great. Or so it seems.

But little by little, as everyone relaxes and quits worrying about being tortured to death, something happens.

Compromise!

Gradually the leaders, for the sake of popularity and gain, let down the standards to make it easier for the pagans to come into the church. But this brings in errors and pagan customs.

Advance warning given in the Bible

Not at all surprised by Satan's scheme to corrupt His church - from within, God gives us fair warning. Listen to Paul's shocking words.

"Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day (of the Lord) shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God." "For the mystery of iniquity doth already work." (2 Thess.2:1- 4,7)

Oh yes. He saw it coming! The mysterious work of corruption rapidly progressed after the death of the last apostle.

Question: What happened?

After persecution ceased, Satan's great device was to control the leaders of the church.

If he could inflate their ego; make them money hungry, the whole body would be affected. A popularity contest would be on to get as many heathen to accept Christianity as possible. The wealth and prestige of the church would grow. Who cares if you have to change the Bible somewhat to get them! Just introduce some of the heathen customs and rites into Christianity, give them Christian names, and the heathen will flock in.

And of all horrors - that's just what happened!

The apostles had gone throughout the empire establishing churches in many cities. As time went by, smaller churches were built in the

surrounding country sides. The large centres were in Jerusalem, Rome, and Alexandria (in Egypt). Rome finally emerged on top.

The next step in the plot was for church leaders to get control of the state to help enforce their decrees. They achieved this beyond their wildest dreams.

The epitome of this came when in 538 AD the entire city of Rome was handed over to the Pope - the Bishop of Rome. For the next 1260 years, church leaders reigned with full civil authority. All just as predicted in prophecy!

Received its seat (throne) from the Roman Empire

"And the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority."
Revelation 13:2.

To whom did the Roman Empire hand over its seat?

“Out of the ruins of political Rome, arose the great moral Empire in the ‘giant form’ of the Roman Church.” (A.C. Flick, *The Rise of the Mediaeval Church*. 1900, p.150)

Roman Emperor Justinian "gave" Rome to the Pope when he decreed that the Pope should be over all the Christian churches of the earth, and established the Papacy in 538 AD, when the Emperor's general Belisarius drove the Ostrogoths from Rome.

Rome gave him his "seat." Bible prophecy predicted it hundreds of years before it happened!

Ruled 1260 years

The seven prophetic verses in the Bible that mention the 1260 year time period are all speaking of the same power which persecutes God's people.

These texts are as follows: Revelation 13:5, Revelation 11:2, Daniel 7:25, Revelation 12:14, Revelation 11:3, Revelation 12:6 and Daniel 12:7.

The key that unlocks the symbolic time prophecies is the principle given in Ezekiel 4:6 and Numbers 14:34. These verses reveal to us that one day in prophecy equals one literal year.

For this reason all symbolic time prophecies must be first broken down into days. Using this Bible "key," time prophecies work out perfectly and become easy to understand.

A month in Bible reckoning contains 30 days. A year contains 360 days. This is the formula for understanding all prophetic time.

In Revelation 11:2 and 12:14, the time period given is "time," "times," and "half a time." This equals $3\frac{1}{2}$ times. From Daniel 4 we learn that a "time" equals one literal year. In that chapter you'll find that King Nebuchadnezzar lost his mind as Daniel predicted, and crawled around in the field for "seven times." He was in that condition for 7 literal years. So $3\frac{1}{2}$ times equals $3\frac{1}{2}$ years ($3\frac{1}{2}$ years contain 1260 days).

Revelation 11:3 and 12:6 plainly give the time that the beast would persecute God's people, as 1260 days.

Using the day for a year principle found in Ezekiel 4:6 and Numbers 14:34, we see that this power would rule for 1260 years before receiving its "deadly wound."

When we take a look at the beast power, we see that this is exactly what has happened. For God to repeat this time period seven times like this shows the importance which He places on it.

Here are the verses in sequence:

Revelation 11:2 and 13:5 describe this power as reigning for 42 months. (42 months with 30 days to a month contain 1260 days.)

Daniel 7:25 and 12:7, and Revelation 12:14 describe the beast as reigning $3\frac{1}{2}$ "times," or years. ($3\frac{1}{2}$ prophetic years also contain 1260 days.)

Revelation 11:3 and 12:6 describe this persecuting power as reigning 1260 days.

All seven texts describe the same length of time – 1260 days. And, as we have observed, 1260 days in symbolic prophecy represents 1260 years. This is the precise length of time that the papacy ruled supreme, before receiving its deadly wound in 1798.

Then received “deadly wound”

From 538 AD the Papacy ruled for exactly 1260 years, until 1798 when something incredible happened. The Pope was taken prisoner! Napoleon's general, Berthier, captured the Pope and took him to France and **the papacy was declared to be abolished – extinct!**

“The Papacy was extinct: not a vestige of its existence remained; and among all the Roman Catholic powers not a finger was stirred in its defence.” (Rev. George Trevor, Canon of York, *Rome and its Papal Rulers*, p.540)

Just as Bible prophecy foretold, the Papacy had reigned exactly 1260 years. Could it have just been coincidence? Why did Berthier do it?

Napoleon wanted to rule the world. The Papacy stood in his way. I wonder if they knew that they were fulfilling prophecy in spite of themselves!

The deadly wound healed

“... and his deadly wound was healed; and all the world wondered after the beast.” Revelation 13:3.

In 1929, the Italian government recognized Vatican City as an independent state. Once again, the Pope was king. On March 9, 1929, he said, “The peoples of the entire world are with us.”

The *San Francisco Chronicle* published an account of the pact-signing on the front page of its newspaper. It actually read like this, “Mussolini and Gaspari Sign Historic Pact . . . **Heal Wound** of Many Years.” That is fantastic! The Bible prophesied that its wound would be healed and the newspaper confirmed it in the exact same words.

The pope is called “God”

Revelation 13:1 says that the beast has “the name of blasphemy”. It became one of the leading doctrines of the church that its visible head is invested with supreme authority over bishops and pastors in all parts of

the world. More than this, he took the very name of God! He was addressed as "Lord God the Pope" and declared to be "infallible."

The following extracts are from authoritative works by Catholic dignitaries concerning the title and position of their leader.

"All the names which are attributed to Christ in Scripture, implying His supremacy over the church, are also attributed to the Pope." (Bellamin, "*On the Authority of Councils*," book 2, Chapter 17)

"For thou art the shepherd, thou art the physician, thou art the director, thou art the husbandman, finally thou art another God on earth." (Labbe and Cossart's "*History of the Councils*," Vol. XIV, col. 109)

For the title "Lord God the Pope," see a gloss on the *Extravagantes* of Pope John XXII, title 14, chapter 4, *Declaramus*.

In an Antwerp edition of the *Extravagantes*, the words, "Dominum Deum Nostrum Papam" (Our Lord God the Pope") occur in column 153. In a Paris edition, they occur in column 140.

"Hence the Pope is crowned with a triple crown, as king of heaven, and earth, and purgatory." (*Prompta Bibliotheca*," Feraris, Vol. VI, pg. 26, article "Papa")

In a passage which is included in the Roman Catholic Canon Law, Pope Innocent III declares that the Roman pontiff is "the vicegerent upon earth, not of a mere man, but of very God;" and in a gloss on the passage it is explained that this is because he is the vicegerent of Christ, Who is "very God and very man." (See *Decretales Domini Gregorii Papae IX* [Decretales of the Lord Pope Gregory IX], *liberi, de translatione Episcoporum*, [on the transference of Bishops], title 7, chapter 3; *Corpus Juris Canonice* (2nd Leipzig ed., 1881), col. 99; [Paris, 1612], tom. 2, *Decretales*, col. 205)

666

On the Pope's official mitre is the title "*Vicarius Filii Dei*" which means "*Vicar of the Son of God*." The claim that this is his official title has been stated publicly through the years. The April 18, 1915 issue of *Our Sunday Visitor* (Roman Catholic), states: "The letters inscribed in the Pope's mitre are these: "VICARIUS FILII DEI," which is Latin for Vicar of the Son of God" (meaning "in place of the Son of God").

In Revelation 13:18 it says, "*Count the number of the beast; for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six. (666).*"

Let's do it now and see what we find. Remember the Roman numerals you learned in school?

V = 5
 I = 1
 C = 100
 A = 0
 R = 0
 I = 1
 U = 5
 S = 0

"U" and "V" have the same value. Look in your encyclopedia under "Alphabet."

F = 0
 I = 1
 L = 50
 I = 1
 I = 1

D = 500
 E = 0
 I = 1
 ----- Total = 666!

In Greek, Hebrew, and Latin, it comes out the same.

It is no use saying that some other power or system could be meant, if the letters of its name add up to 666. By the laws of evidence, ALL specifications in the prophecy must match. One or two isolated points prove nothing. EVERY specification must line up.

I want to be quick to say that when a person shares this shocking revelation, he must be kind and tactful. We must let people know that God loves all. The truth must be told - but always in kindness.

The Bible forbidden

The 1260 years of the Papacy's rule are called the "Dark Ages." I'm sure you've heard that expression before. The reason it was so dark is because the priests forbade anyone to read or even have a Bible! For hundreds of years only the priests were allowed to read Bibles. Satan had to get the Bibles away from the people in order to keep them in darkness and superstition. The people just didn't know any better.

There was a time when if you were caught with a Bible, you were dragged out of your home, hung up on a pole, and burned alive in your front yard!

In the Council of Toulouse, the church leaders ruled: "We prohibit laymen possessing copies of the Old and New Testament . . . We forbid them most severely to have the above books in the popular vernacular." "The lords of the districts shall carefully seek out the heretics in dwellings, hovels, and forests, and even their underground retreats shall be entirely wiped out." (*Concil Tolosanum*, Pope Gregory IX, Anno. Chr. 1229)

The church Council of Tarragona ruled that: "No one may possess the books of the Old and New Testaments in the Romance language, and if anyone possesses them he must turn them over to the local bishop within eight days after the promulgation of this decree, so that they may be burned." (D. Lortsch, *Histoire de la Bible en France*, 1910, p.14)

After the Bible societies were formed, they were classed with Communism in an amazing decree. On December 8, 1866, Pope Pius IX, in his encyclical *Quanta Cura* issued the following statement: "Socialism, Communism, clandestine societies, Bible societies . . . pests of this sort must be destroyed by all means."

Why did Rome later permit the Bible?

Why does Rome permit the Bible now?

Briefly, the reason is this. When Roman Catholic priests like Martin Luther and others discovered that the Bible taught salvation by acceptance of God's mercy and that one could go direct to God the Father through Jesus Christ – contrary to what the Church was teaching, half of Europe broke away from the papacy.

There are two great truths that stand out in the preaching of the Reformers: (1) The just shall live by faith (not by the works of Romanism); and (2) the Papacy is the Antichrist of Scripture. It was a message FOR Christ and AGAINST Antichrist.

The strength of Protestantism was seen to be the Bible. The Received Text, which the Protestants all used, was continuing to shake Europe. It seemed invincible. Tyndale's English Bible in the hands of the common people was already securing Protestantism's grip on England.

The Council of Trent was convened to *plot destruction of the Protestant movement*.

So it was decided to infiltrate Protestant churches and promote within them a Bible to counteract Tyndale's version – one that would more closely mirror Rome's own teachings and weaken Protestantism's stand against Rome. And a Bible commentary – to point people away from the papacy as the Antichrist and cause them to look off into the future for an unknown individual of the end time. This theory was called Futurism.

"Once they would not suffer any man to scarce touch a Bible," observed Thomas Brightman (1562-1607), "now they produce a commentary to explain it – to point men away from the papal antichrist."

This policy has continued to this day. It is a major reason for the flood of new versions being released. And wonder of wonders, this Jesuit scheme of interpretation came to be adopted by a growing number of Protestants, accepted by many.

This is a cloak and dagger story of tremendous intrigue. If you haven't yet read my explosive book *The Sorcerers' Secret* (from 14 years of painstaking research on the modern Bible versions), may I recommend you get yourself a copy now.

Changed God's law

First we should be aware of **what the Bible says about God's law**:

"All his commandments are sure. They stand fast for ever and ever."
(Psa.111:8)

“Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good... The carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.” (Rom.7:12; 8:7)

“Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven, but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.” (Matt.5:18,19)

You notice, Jesus Himself has declared that the law of God must never be changed, will never really be changed! Jesus would give such power to no one. But the prophecies also stated that the religious power which would emerge in Rome after the demise of the Roman Empire would think itself able to change God’s law!

“He shall think to change times and laws [of God].” (Dan.7:25)

You ask the papacy, Did you change God’s law?” The answer is, “Of course we did! Who else would dare?” Notice:

“The Pope has power to change times, to abrogate laws, and to dispense with all things, even the precepts of Christ.” (Decretal, de translation Episcop. Cap)

“Q. What is the Third Commandment?

A. The Third Commandment is, ‘Remember that thou keep holy the Sabbath day.’

Q. Which is the Sabbath day?

A. Saturday is the Sabbath day.

Q. Why do we observe Sunday instead of Saturday?

A. We observe Sunday instead of Saturday, because the Catholic Church, in the Council of Laodicea (A.D. 336), transferred the solemnity from Saturday to Sunday. (*Convert’s Catechism of Catholic Doctrine*, p.49. This has received the apostolic blessing of Pope Pius X.)

“Protestants... accept Sunday rather than Saturday as the day of public worship after the Catholic Church made the change... But the Protestant mind does not seem to realize that in accepting the Bible, in observing the Sunday, they are accepting the authority of... the Pope.” (*Our Sunday Visitor*, Roman Catholic, February 5, 1950)

“The Bible says, ‘Remember that thou keep holy the Sabbath day.’ The Catholic Church says, No! by my divine power I abolish the Sabbath day,

and command you to keep holy the first day of the week. And, lo! The entire civilized world bows down in reverent obedience to the command of the holy Catholic Church.” (Father Enright, President of Redemptorist College – R.C.)

By contrast, the mark, or “seal of God” is connected with obedience to God’s law. (Isaiah 8:16; Deuteronomy 6:1,6-8; 11:13,18; Ezekiel 9:4)

In speaking of God’s law, notice the contrast with the mark of the beast that goes into the forehead or hand: “It shall be for a SIGN unto thee upon thine HAND, and for a memorial BETWEEN THINE EYES [forehead], that the Lord’s law may be in thy mouth.” (Ex.13:9) The seal of God is His symbol, His identifying sign, His label.

Just as the “beast” power today boasts that its inauguration of Sunday sacredness is a “mark” of its authority over the whole world, by contrast, God Himself has made the seventh day Sabbath (Saturday) the sign of His sovereignty over us, since He created this world. (Ezekiel 20:12,20; Exodus 31:13; 20:8-11).

(The question we must individually answer before God is this: Do we accept the authority of Jesus Christ as Creator (of which the seventh day Sabbath is the sign, or emblem), or do we accept the authority of Rome the antichrist (whose sign of authority is Sunday worship)? That’s the issue. We must each personally decide under whose banner we will stand.

The “mark” of the beast

“Sunday is our MARK of authority... The Church is above the Bible, and this transference of Sabbath observance is proof of that fact.”
(*Catholic Record*, London, Ontario, Canada, September 1, 1923)

“Of course the Catholic Church claims that the change was her act... and the act [of changing the God-appointed Sabbath day] is a MARK of our power and authority in religious matters.” (From the office of Cardinal Gibbons, through Chancellor H.F. Thomas, November 11, 1895)

The Bible says that the mark of the beast is the “mark of his *name*.” The pope claims to be *Vicarius Filii Dei*, “the vicar of the Son of God”. That means “*In place of the Son of God*” – “*in place of Christ*”.

Did you know that the term “*anti*” in “*Anti-Christ*” does **not** mean “against” but “*in place of*”?

So when the pope at his coronation receives the title *Vicarius Filii Dei*, he is accepting a name which means “*antichrist*”!

But what about the “*mark of his name*”?

As proof of his claim that he stands in place of Christ, he points to the fact that he has changed Christ’s Bible Sabbath to Sunday. Surely this is conclusive proof that he stands in Christ’s place! He *must* be authorised as Christ’s stand-in Vicar, otherwise how could he have validly made such a vital change in God’s law?

“Sunday” observance is, therefore, the proof or mark of his “vicarship”. It is “the MARK OF HIS NAME”.

When this “MARK” of Rome’s authority is enforced by law, such a move will be in violation of God’s Ten Commandment law. It will result in religious oppression of minority groups.

The prophecy says that the second beast of Revelation (American Protestantism) will “speak like a dragon”. How does a nation speak? Through its laws. The second beast will form a likeness to the first beast (Rome), when religion and state join hands to enforce religious laws. It will “cause” (compel) the people to accept this mark of Rome and, in so doing “worship” (obey) the first beast (Rome). And the whole world will follow suit. (Rev.13:12,16)

You have heard the expression, “When America sneezes the whole world catches a cold”?

After warning against the **mark of the beast** (Rev.14:6-11), the Bible immediately follows with a description of those who in their love for God refuse to accept this mark: “Here is the patience [endurance] of the saints: here are they that keep the **commandments of God** and the **faith of Jesus.**” (v.12)

You notice that the mark of the beast is a direct opposite to the law of God. The mark is a SPIRITUAL issue, not physical.

A close relationship with our precious Saviour will enable us to stand firm for His law and endure patiently until the end, just as He endured on the Cross for you and me.

He dies alone

In that darkness on the cross, as He died for you and me, Jesus was alone.

And what anguish! He was giving up everything - his heavenly home, his own Father, even life itself — for them. The sneering ones around the cross — he loved them still. But where were his disciples?

The prophet Daniel had said it all: he was to die "not for himself", but for others — "and shall have nothing" — no people, no place, no recognition, no kingdom, no followers. Not even his clothes. Stripping him naked was the ultimate shame. Deprived of everything.

Through long hours of agony, Jesus had been gazed upon by the jeering crowd. But now, while he drank the last dregs of the cup of divine displeasure, now, from the gaze of the curious crowd, he was mercifully hidden by the mantle of darkness. The silence of the grave seemed to have fallen upon the countryside. Breathless heat. The stillness of earthquake weather.

A nameless terror gripped the crowd that was gathered. The cursing ceased. Some trembled.

The darkness persisted. Lightning occasionally flashed, illuminating the cross and the victim. At first, priests, executioners and the mob began to wonder if their time of judgment had come.

Eventually, some regained their composure and moved out. Others remained, speaking in whispers. An undeniable dread was upon each mind. The overspreading darkness was as unaccountable as it was frightening.

A woman was heard to exclaim, "This is his power! He has produced this miracle."

"Perhaps we'll see him come down from the cross," breathed another. A few more attempted to grope their way back to the city.

And now only the soldiers remained close to the cross, duty-bound to stay. As well as those who most loved Jesus.

The two thieves were heard sobbing, then muttering in delirium as the high fever of great pain muddled their minds.

But from the centre cross came only silence.

In the darkness Jesus was alone. He was passing through the deepest and most dreadful part of his agony. So great was the anguish that his physical pain was hardly felt.

The dreadful thought was pressing upon him, "Even your Father in heaven won't want you now. All this guilt you have chosen to take upon yourself has doomed you. You are finished."

Throughout his life Jesus (Yeshua) had been telling people the good news of his Father's mercy and pardoning love. Salvation even for the worst of sinners, he had said. But now, with the terrible guilt he was bearing, he could not see the Father's forgiving face.

How the divine Father must have suffered with His Son! One can imagine Him pressing close in the darkness, longing to intervene. But He must hold back and let the penalty be paid. What a price was paid for your rescue and mine! The Innocent Ones were the victims.

Jesus, the sin-bearer, endured the wrath of divine justice against sin. Now, as God strikes sin, He strikes His own Son. The guilt of every wrong committed on this planet presses upon his soul. In the place of the wrongdoer, the Son of God suffers the penalty.

Alone Jesus endures this anguish to save us from it. He feels the black despair which the lost rejecter of rescue will feel on the final judgment day... the torment of separation from one's Creator... the torment of the damned, when they realize that, by their own choice, they are God-forsaken and lost forever.

"My God, my God" — Jesus' cry pierces the darkness — "why have you forsaken me?"

Since eternity they have been together — closer than Siamese twins. Throughout his life on earth, every morning while it was still dark, Jesus has been rising to spend hours with his Father, to gain strength in prayer for his work among humans.

Now, in the darkness, it seems that even his heavenly Father has deserted him. The hope of rising from the tomb a conqueror now seems a distant illusion. Despair tells him that his separation from his Father will be permanent.

Now it appears that he is going down to a grave from which there will be no resurrection. So that these men and women around the cross can receive the joy of life in a new world and the company of the Father, he himself must give up life forever.

"My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?"

Unutterable anguish fills his soul at the hiding of his Father's face because of the world's sin upon him.

The Rescuer's heart breaks with that cry. He has borne all that even he can bear.

He was counted a law-breaker, that he might release us from the penalty of the law. The guilt of every person since Adam was pressing upon his heart. It was this sense of sin, which he was bearing as man's substitute — it was the terrible revealing of God's displeasure against sin, which made Jesus' suffering so bitter, and crushed out the life of the Son of God.

I have reflected deeply on the implications of this for me personally.

Rescue was that day purchased for me by the suffering and death of the Son of God. But He arose from the dead, guaranteeing your resurrection and mine.

The gift of rescue can be mine — and yours — to accept gratefully. But no one is compelled to yield. If I disregard it, that's my choice — and at the end I shall receive my wages. I will have lost a life of eternal happiness for the fleeting pleasures of the sin disease now.

What value our Creator has placed upon each person!

In the days ahead, each of us will be personally challenged by events. His promise to us is: "He that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne." (Rev.3:21) "He that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved." (Matt.24:13)

"Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the [holy] city." (Rev.22:14)

Time is running out. History is closing. Are you ready?

APPENDIX E

EXTRA INSIDE INFORMATION

PART 1

The following is from a taped interview by Jan Marcussen with (1) Jack Chick of “Chick Publications,” and (2) ex-Jesuit priest Alberto Rivera.

COLLEGE IN ROME PLANNING AMERICA’S DEMISE

Ex-Jesuit Priest: In order to maintain their disguise, and to uphold the Roman Catholic institution as a Christian church, a Jesuit can go so far as to say that the pope is an antichrist, and still be in favour. [In the days of John Wycliffe there were three contending popes who were saying that about each other. John Wycliffe told the people that all three of them were correct.] After the Vatican II Council, they can debate anything. They’ve been granted license for it.

Many of the things that were planned in the Vatican II Council are coming to pass now. And as the days go by, I’m in a better position to deal with this ugly, horrifying matter of infiltration and penetration, because they are ugly, they are horrifying, and they are scary.

What the Jesuit wants to see is a complete - a complete unbalanced situation in any Christian group and any Christian community. Wherever the pure principles of Christianity are being preserved and taught and defended, they will have something to do.

Let me tell you a little about the Gregorian University in Rome. Of course, it’s a Jesuit university. It is located on the second Vatican hill of the seven hills. That happens to be the hill dedicated to the destruction of the United States of America. (It is a college in the Vatican dedicated to destroy their present system and take them over.)

Jack Chick: They're 50% gone in the States. In the Bible belt, Catholics are moving in from Mexico and other Catholic countries, and marrying every Protestant girl they can get their hands on [to help fulfill the papal goal of making America Catholic]. Rome is really on the offensive.

VATICAN II AND PROFESSIONAL KILLERS

Jack Chick: Dr. Rivera revealed what took place on the last night of the Vatican II Council when they told the world that we are all brothers and sisters in Christ. Instead of calling Protestants "heretics," they would now call us "separated brethren." They put on a whole new face.

But in another section of the Vatican there was a whole different picture. Dr. Rivera happened to be in that meeting. The Superior Jesuit General, whose name at the time was Pedro Aruppe [the Black Pope], was present. And all the Jesuits under extreme oath and induction were there. How many were there? Over 200?

Ex-Jesuit Priest: Yes, over that.

Jack Chick: These were all hit men - professional killers for the Vatican. The head of the Inquisition was present [That's the office the present pope had before becoming pope.] And Jesuit generals from around the world had been flown in for this special meeting.

This was one of the most important meetings ever held in the Vatican. And it was just at the completion of Vatican II [when they told the world they loved us], that the black pope had a special high mass to announce to all of these people present that they would now launch the final purge for the last Inquisition.

Dr. Rivera went white because he realized that Rome was now ready to go for the jugular and take us out. So he's shown me what is coming in the future as applying to the US.

Ex-Jesuit priest: They've been infiltrating every church of any size. They've had their people moving in for the purpose of causing disruption and to shut their mouths if they ever open them against the Vatican.

In the Catholic institution they have what they call traditional Catholics.

These are the ones who would shed every drop of their Catholic blood to defend the pope. They've got them all over the world. It was Pope John Paul II who announced that they were now setting up tribunals in every Catholic Church.

Ex-Jesuit Priest: Reviving.

Jack Chick: Reviving tribunals. Every time you have an Inquisition you have tribunals. So the traditional Catholics are taking the names of every Catholic who is not attending mass, who is supporting the 700 Club, or who is attending some of the Protestant churches. These people are now marked. These "unfaithful" Catholics are being led by Jesuits to go into every Protestant church and tell the people that we are now all brothers and sisters in Christ. These are sacrificial lambs. When Rome's Inquisition begins, the plan is that these will all be executed.

Rome is planning for the Inquisition to break when the US signs the concordat with the Vatican. When we recognize the Vatican, it's the death-knell for the US. As soon as we sign a concordat with the Vatican it means that their constitution will surpass our constitution. Their laws will be based on the Council of Trent. [The Council of Trent was convened in Martin Luther's day to counteract the Protestant Reformation.]

Ex-Jesuit priest: Knowing what I knew while I was still a Jesuit, I can see the workings of Rome in the newspapers, on T.V., and in society. Most Catholics do not even know what is about to take place, but I can see it from the information that I was briefed as a Jesuit. The planned massacre is going to be the greatest massacre that the world has ever witnessed. This is required by Rome for the takeover - not of the United States only, but of the takeover of the world.

Ex-Jesuit Priest: Rome's efforts to regain the world were seen in the First World War and the Second World War, but the Vatican's planned massacre will be greater than those wars that killed millions and millions of people. This will be the last act of the Roman Catholic institution.

Ex-Jesuit Priest: The book of Revelation identifies her as the great whore. Not only a whore, but *the* great whore. She is the mastermind of everything we have witnessed against the true cause of God 24 hours a day around the clock for 1600 years. You say Communism killed them? Behind it was Rome. Nazism killed the Jews? Behind it was Rome.

Jack Chick: The Communist Party was founded by Jesuits, and so was

the Nazi Party. A lot of books are disappearing right now. Catholics are being sent into the libraries and are checking them out. Then they never return the books that reveal the history of what has been happening.

Years ago when we first started, I went into the library to find photographs of the instruments of the Inquisition. [During the papacy's 1260 year rule from 538 to 1798, from 50 million to 120 million "heretics" were murdered.] I had to have a special slip to pick them up because they told me that those books have been disappearing. They've been given the order to check them out and then lose the books.

Ex-Jesuit Priest: That is part of the purge. That is part of the work of the Vatican in order to prepare for a concordat.

Jack Chick: The night that they signed a concordat with Germany, Hitler already had seventeen concentration camps ready to roll. The United States is already building her camps now.

[There are more than 600 of them built, and guillotines are being made ready – and soldiers are currently being trained how to use them. A Revelation prophecy tells us that many who refuse to follow Rome's mark of the beast will be beheaded – Rev.20:4.]

Ex-Jesuit Priest: Yes. Prior to the signing of a concordat with the United States, the Vatican wants these, these, these, these, items to be taken care of. When they are debating with a nation or an individual concerning an agreement, you must give a little bit, and they give you a little bit.

THE "MOTHER" OF ABOMINATIONS

Rome is not just one of ten major religions. She is unique as **THE ONE SUPREME RULER OF WORLD AFFAIRS.**

Jack Chick: She is not only the **mother** of harlots, but she is "the **mother** of abominations of the earth." (Rev.17:5) These abominations of the earth were conceived by her, and they were given birth by her.

But she works to isolate these very things as being separate from herself and pretends to be fighting them, so that you can never see that she has anything to do with them. And you'll be thinking - "They're not so bad

after all. They're fighting **abortion**! They're fighting **drugs**! They're fighting **alcohol**! They're fighting **homosexuality**!"

- They masquerade when they say that they fight **Communism**. [Pope John Paul II was a member of the Communist Party himself, and they encouraged the young Catholic people to join it.]
- They are on the street right now saying that they are fighting **abortion**. Roman Catholicism fighting abortion? Do you know what that means? Who is fighting who? The priests and nuns have had more abortions than any group in the world.
- The pharmaceutical industry is in the hands of the Jesuits. It's all part of their economy. They control the **illegal drugs** with the mafia and the **legal drugs** with the pharmacies. The money that set up these pharmaceutical companies was money from the bank of the Vatican.
- They have the greatest **distilleries of whiskey** in the world.

We had a lady come into our front office the other day and she said, "Did you know that the Catholic Church is **the mafia** and the mafia is the Catholic Church? And we said, "yes." She broke into tears and said, "I've been trying to tell people this and nobody believes me. I worked 14 years for the mafia. In upstate New York, they had the mafia godfathers come in from cities around the country. Every time one of these men would come in, he'd bring a Catholic priest with him and they'd all sit around talking about who they're going to kill."

Ex-Jesuit Priest: Catholic historians are at work now to re-touch every school textbook to wipe out anything that would put a bad light on the church or expose the work of the hierarchy.

They have their own division among everybody. If they see that the Democrats are going to win, they have their division among the Democrats. If they think that the Republicans are going to win, they have their division among the Republicans.

The mafia is the most professional industry in the world because now the mafia is not dealing just with illegal drugs, but they are dealing with the greatest trade unions. They have the greatest industries. They deal with the greatest transactions in banking, insurance companies, and real-estate. [They own great super-market chains where you buy your groceries at a good price, and own and control many of the large book and magazine publishing houses, wholesale houses, distributors, and many of the large book stores.]

Ex-Jesuit Priest: The popes are appointed by the Supreme Jesuit General [the black pope] first, and elected by the cardinals second. They know so well what will happen if they do not perfectly do what the Jesuit General tells them. Sometimes cardinals who are appointed by the Jesuit General to be the next pope have said “no.”

Unknown questioner in the interview: What happens to them?

Ex-Jesuit Priest: What happens is, they don't survive. For this reason several cardinals die immediately after a new pope is elected. How can you call the Roman institution a Christian church when God calls her a whore, and God is going to put her on fire? (Jan Marcussen, *Letter 462*, WBNS.US)

BUT GOD LOVES THE INNOCENT PEOPLE

Our kind Father loves the dear Catholic people. And He gives us His tender love for them. The message He has given in the Bible for them is in Revelation chapters 17 and 18. These chapters clearly spell out that there is no future inside the Roman Catholic system.

“Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities. . . for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived. And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.” (Rev.18:4-5,23-24)

PART 2

The following is from a taped interview with Hiram Dukes by historical researcher Jim Arrabito.

Hiram Dukes was a secret agent working for the US Federal Government during World War II and his wife was the chief stenographer for the Pentagon.

She says that all the money that went from the United States to Europe for the troops went first through the Vatican.

In Chicago, Dukes was invited into a huge mansion where a meeting was convened with high Roman Catholic dignitaries. He recalls that there were many cars all around it. As he entered, the host turned the key in the lock behind him, then opened a double door to a mammoth sized parlour and dining room with big double doors in between.

Seated around a table were cardinals from all over the US. They were planning a eucharistic congress in Scotland.

They strongly urged him to become one of them, offering him money, scholarships and other incentives.

Hiram Dukes: They told me the advantage of being Catholic. They said, “We’re going to take over America” and told what they’ll do with America. “And we’ve got it fixed so that no way in the world can they escape coming under our control.”

I asked, “How are you going to take over the South? It’s predominantly Protestant.”

“We’re going to seed the South with Catholic families – then when the men marry Protestant girls, the kids will be raised Catholic. And one quarter, one third, then over half – then, when we get more than half, then we’ve got America. That’s one way of doing it. But we’ve got other ways, too.”

“What if people in America heard of this, what if they knew this?”

“If they knew what we were planning, there’d be bloodshed in 24 hours, and lots in 48 hours.”

“Are you prepared to take over?”

“Yes, we have standing armies. We have everything prepared, with guns, ammunition and all the works. We can take over. You might as well join us and be on the right side of the fence.”

I said, “There’s nothing you can do to get me to join you. My heart’s going through to eternity... You’d better open the door and let me out, because I know there are others who know I’m here. And there’ll be an investigation if you don’t let me out.”

One in a Cardinal's cap said to me, "We'll let you go. But I'll tell you this. Everyone born in the US who's not born a Catholic is put on a white card. You are kept on that card until we feel like we need to watch you. Then you're put on a blue card. And we watch you. If we feel like you shouldn't be in existence, we'll put you on a red card. From now on, you're on a red card as long as you live." (Jim Arrabito, Video, *Behind the Door*. LLT Productions)

(Hiram Dukes revealed that Rome's agents infiltrate churches to "gather information" to be used against Protestant church people in the future.)

PART 3

The following is another testimony in a taped interview with Hiram Dukes by historical research specialist Jim Arrabito.

Hiram Dukes: Charlie Bebridge held a high position in the Church of Rome in New York. This occasion was a certain day specified by the organization when they should not eat meat. However, Charlie happened to be eating a beef steak. He said, "I don't feel too good about this. I'm not supposed to do it today."

Just then, three dignitaries of the Roman Catholic system walked in. And they talked to him about the work.

When they left, Charlie said, "You don't know what this means to me. I'll catch hell for this. I used to be the head official that used to deal with people who broke the rules. If you go down to some of the big churches in New York, down into the basement where corners are cut off... I was the one that took the people that was sentenced and put them in the corner [chained]... and [there was] put in one brick each day [slowly walling them in]. I put in the last brick. And there are many skeletons behind the wall. You don't know what this means to me. I was the chief executioner for that deal. I'll hear from them in a few days."

A few days later he got a notice. He was told he had to meet before the tribunal in New York.

He left on a train. He said, "If I live I'll send you a card for your birthday." It never came.

Tribunals are now set up for the Catholic people. And for others too, if they can get away with it.

Under many churches being built I have seen the basements – with equipment being placed in them. Not just one storey down, but sometimes more. (Jim Arrabito, Video, *Behind the Door*. LLT Productions)

Final note:

Similar evidence is coming in from many locations. Undercover, the Inquisition is going on today. The Inquisition has never stopped. Only the name and the instruments have changed. It is called The Office for the Preservation of the Doctrine and the Faith.

Jesuits are trained in chemistry, in poisons, and instruments of war. They don't kill direct. They are the intellectuals who prepare the plot to kill, and use agents to do the work.

The book *Night Journey From Rome*, by ex-priest Calabara Field (who was ultimately murdered), exposes the secret Inquisition going on in the USA today.

However, I do not want you to be afraid of what lies ahead. There is no need to fear what is coming. If your future is secure in Jesus Christ, if you have totally surrendered your life to Him, you can even rejoice if you have to suffer for Him. After all, didn't He suffer the greatest of all punishments, to rescue you?

It's ironic, when you think about it. Jesuits, since 1541, have been working busily to take over the world politically and religiously, to control to excess the coming New World Order. They have been infiltrating governments, churches and all institutions. They are now ready for a takeover.

After almost 500 years, they are now ready. But all this effort is going to be in vain. God is not caught by surprise. Bible prophecy foretold it. And, all that these infiltrators have laboured so hard for, will last only "one hour" (Rev.18:19) - meaning a very brief time.

Because Jesus will suddenly appear. He will take over, destroy the New World Order and deliver His people.

APPENDIX F

“MAN OF SIN” – WHO’S SIDE ARE WE ON?

Please notice below, the stark difference between the Roman Catholic and Protestant understanding of the “man of sin”:

1. ROMAN CATHOLIC:

After citing Paul’s “man of sin” passage in 2 Thess.2: “By all these words is described to us the great antichrist, about the end of the world.... It may suffice to observe here that antichrist, is to be **one particular man**, not so many different men. That he is to come **a little while before the day of judgment**. That he will make himself be adored, and pretend to be God. What pope did so? That **he will pretend to be Christ, &c.**” (*A Catholic Bible commentary* compiled by the late Rev. Fr. George Leo Haydock, following Rome’s Douay-Rheims Bible. Cites St.Augustine[6], lib. xx. de Civ. Dei. chap. 19. t. 7. p. 597, and Witham)

2. PROTESTANT REFORMERS:

The Protestant Reformation in the 1500s literally changed the course of history. It helped move Europe out of the Dark Ages and led to the rise of true religious freedom. Its original principles eventually found expression in the First Amendment of the Constitution of the United States of America which teaches that when it comes to religion, the governments of earth have no right to control the conscience.

True Protestantism teaches salvation by grace through faith in Jesus (Eph. 2:8) and the supremacy of the Bible above the visible church (2 Tim.3:16) - above traditions, pastors, priests, popes and kings (See *D'Aubigne's History of the Reformation of the Sixteen Century*, book xiii, chapter vi, pp. 520-524). It also teaches the priesthood of all believers (2 Pet.2:9,10) and that all people everywhere can be saved by coming directly to our

loving heavenly Father through His only Son, Jesus Christ (John 14:6).
 "There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus" (1 Tim.2:5).

What did the major Protestant Reformers teach about the Antichrist “man of sin” in 2 Thess.2?

Martin Luther (1483-1546) (Lutheran): “Luther ... proved, by the revelations of Daniel and St. John, by the **epistles of St. Paul**, St. Peter, and St. Jude, that the reign of Antichrist, predicted and described in the Bible, was **the Papacy** ...” (J. H. Merle, *D'aubigne's History of the Reformation of the Sixteen Century*, book vi, chapter xii, p. 215)

Based on prophetic studies, Martin Luther finally declared on August 18, 1520, “We here are of the conviction that the papacy is the **seat of the true and real Antichrist.**” (LeRoy Froom, *The Prophetic Faith of Our Fathers*, Vol. 2., p. 121)

John Calvin (1509-1564) (Presbyterian): “Some persons think us too severe and censorious when we call the Roman pontiff Antichrist. But those who are of this opinion do not consider that they bring the same charge of presumption against **Paul himself**, after whom we speak and whose language we adopt... I shall briefly show that [Paul's words in II Thess. 2] are not capable of any other interpretation than that which applies them to **the Papacy.**” (John Calvin, *Institutes of the Christian Religion*)

John Knox (1505-1572) (Scotch Presbyterian): John Knox sought to counteract “that tyranny which the pope himself has for so many ages exercised over the church.” As with Luther, he finally concluded that **the Papacy** was “the very antichrist, and **son of perdition, of whom Paul speaks [in 2 Thess.2:3].**” (John Knox, *The Zurich Letters*, p. 199)

Roger Williams (1603-1683) (First Baptist Pastor in America): Pastor Williams spoke of **the Pope** as “**the pretended Vicar of Christ on earth, who sits as God over the Temple of God, exalting himself not only above all that is called God**, but over the souls and consciences of all his vassals, yea over the Spirit of Christ, over the Holy Spirit, yea, and God himself...speaking against the God of heaven, thinking to change times and laws; but he is the **son of perdition (2 Thess. 2).**” (Froom, *The Prophetic Faith of Our Fathers*, Vol. 3, p. 52)

The Westminster Confession of Faith (1647): “There is no other head of the church but the Lord Jesus Christ. Nor can **the pope of Rome** in any sense be head thereof; but is that Antichrist, **that man of sin** and son of

perdition that exalteth himself in the church against Christ and all that is called God.” (Philip Schaff, *The Creeds of Christendom, With a History and Critical Notes*, III, p. 658, 659, ch. 25, sec. 6)

John Wesley (1703-1791) (Methodist): Speaking of **the Papacy**, John Wesley wrote, “He is in an emphatical sense, **the Man of Sin**, as he increases all manner of sin above measure. And he is, too, properly styled the Son of Perdition, as he has caused the death of numberless multitudes, both of his opposers and followers... He it is...that **exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped**...claiming the highest power, and highest honour...claiming the prerogatives which belong to God alone.” (John Wesley, *Antichrist and His Ten Kingdoms*, p. 110)

Dedication in the beginning of the **King James Bible**: “...the zeal of Your Majesty... by writing in defence of the truth, (which hath given such a blow unto that **Man of Sin** as will not be healed,)... So that if, on the one side, we shall be traduced by **Popish persons** at home or abroad...”

COMPARE THEM:

There you have it!

1. The Bible-burning **papacy** claims the “man of sin” is a **single individual** near the end of time who will impersonate Jesus.
2. The Bible-believing **Protestant** Reformers claim that the “man of sin” is the **papal organization centred on a man** – the same as the “little horn” of Daniel 7 with “eyes like the eyes of a man” and the first beast of Revelation 13 with “the number of a man”.

You have two opposing forces at work:

1. Satan’s masterful organization out to deflect the pointing finger away from itself, and
2. the reformers led by the Holy Spirit recognising Satan’s organizational masterpiece.

Knowing who is in control of the papal system, and knowing who was in control of the Reformation, just ask yourself this question: **Who’s explanation of “the man of sin” is likely to be the correct one?**

SO WHOSE SIDE ARE YOU ON?

These opposites are now screaming at us!

Below is a brief summary of prophetic teaching as promoted (a) by Roman Catholic theologians, and (b) by the Protestant reformers. You may decide for yourself in whose company you wish to be.

Are you ready? Here it is...

TOPIC	ROMAN CATHOLIC THEOLOGIANS	“SATAN-IS 2 ND -BEAST” PROMOTER	PROTESTANT REFORMERS
1. PAUL’S “MAN OF SIN”	“not the papacy” “a single person at the end of time”	“not the papacy” “a single person at the end of time”	“the papacy” “the papacy”
2. A “BEAST” IN PROPHECY	“can be an individual man”	“can be an individual man”	“an empire or system only”
3. ATTITUDE TOWARD THE REFORMATION	Has no love for the Reformation	Appears to have very little love for the Reformation <i>(see the paragraph after the next, below)</i>	

It is the Reformation which brought us freedom, our Bible and the truth.

However, the inventor of “the earth beast is Satan” theory laments: “**The problem** with historicism today **is that it is still bashing the pope** and the Roman Catholic church **as though the 18th century Reformation was still going on.**” (Larry Wilson, *Warning: Revelation is About to be Fulfilled*, 1997, pp.28,29)

The Reformers identified Paul’s “man of sin” as **the beast system – centred in one “man” who plays God.**

This question must be asked: **Do I reject** the leading of the Holy Spirit which was given to these Reformers in their mass anti-papal awakening?

This historic leading of God should not be taken lightly.

APPENDIX G

HOW TO SURVIVE

Meanwhile, you may be called upon to endure the greatest time of trouble this earth has ever seen. (Matt.24:21 ; Dan.12:1)

May I offer some practical tips for physical survival?

1. Reduce or eliminate debt. Phase out credit cards.
2. Learn restraint and self-sufficiency. Stop spending money on unnecessary things.
3. A simple life is more biblical, more sensible and more healthy. It preserves sanity.
4. Store food staples, and learn to prepare and enjoy simple foods.
5. Learn to survive without doctors, without lawyers, without police, without government handouts and interference.
6. If you live in a big city, try to move to the country as soon as you can. When the infrastructure fails, the cities will be in chaos. If you are still in the city there will be no way out – and no way for anyone to come to your aid. Gasoline won't be available, and cars will be useless.

But how about when/if things shut down completely?

1. Make contingency plans for living for at least several months without electricity (using oil lamps, wood heat, and so on).
2. If possible, secure a small piece of land out of the beaten path and plant a garden.
3. Think about how you can get water when electricity is not available.
4. Plan for sewage disposal as well.
5. Pray for wisdom. "Trust in the Lord with all thine heart, and lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge Him, and He shall direct thy paths." (Prov.3:5-6)

Then, when you are refused the ability to buy or sell, if you are not dependent upon the system, you will not feel so pressured to accept the mark of the beast for the sake of your family's survival.

If hard times come, God will see you through. God does not fail. “But my God shall supply all your need according to His riches in glory by Christ Jesus.” (Phil. 4:19)

More importantly, get yourself ready spiritually. That is your first priority. Your future must be with Jesus.

Ask the Lord to look deep into your heart and show you what needs to be made right.

- Is there any secret sin, known or unknown, that needs to be faced and repented of?
- Does any resentment linger in your heart toward someone who has wronged you?
- Is there anger or fear in your heart over something that you need to ask Jesus to take from you?
- Is there a wrong habit which needs to be overcome? Your faith in Christ can give you the victory over it.

Oh, taste and see that the Lord is good! His Holy Spirit is all powerful, exceedingly above all that you might ask or think.

Whatever you need to confess or forsake, please do it now. There may not be much time left. You have a heavenly Father who loves you without limit.

You have not one atom to fear! If you know the Lord Jesus Christ as your Saviour and love and walk with Him, you need not be afraid. Nothing can touch you unless He permits. In Him alone is a place of safety, salvation, and security forever.

Here is a wonderful promise He has given us: “Be content with such things as ye have; for He hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee. So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper; I will not fear what man shall do unto me.” (Heb.13:5-6) “The name of the Lord is a strong tower; the righteous runneth into it and is safe.” (Prov.18:10)

May I meet you in His kingdom!

God bless you.